

THE AGE OF TREASON

**The Carefully and Deliberately Planned Methods
Developed by the Vicious Element of Humanity,
for the Mental Deterioration, and Moral
Debasement of the Mass as a Means to
Their Enslavement**

**Based on Their Own Writings, and the Means
Already Confessedly Employed**

**DESTROY A MAN'S REASON AND FEELINGS AND
HE WILL NO LONGER BE A HUMAN BEING**



By DR. R. SWINBURNE CLYMER

**Published by
THE HUMANITARIAN SOCIETY, Reg.
P. O. Box 77
Quakertown, Penna.**

LABADIE
COLLECTION

HN
65
064
1959

Unquoted Contents Copyrighted 1959
By the HUMANITARIAN SOCIETY, Reg.
Quakertown, Penna.

THE
HUMANITARIAN SOCIETY, Reg.

The Humanitarian Society was organized when it became evident that the United States would be drawn into the first World War.

The Society was organized for Humanitarian and Reconstruction work.

The Society is not connected or associated with any other group or organization.

The Society is non-Sectarian, non-Political and non-Profit.

Membership in the Society is open to all who will subscribe to its views, are in sympathy with its efforts and help support the work.

The work of the Society is supported by the sale of its literature and the free will donations of those sincerely interested in the welfare of their fellow men.

We do not deal in personalities. We do not accuse. We report. We in no sense wish to act as prosecutors of those in any way guilty of acts not for the welfare of the mass. We are serving solely as social researcher for those seeking information on subjects of infinite importance to humanity.

For a statement of the history and aims of the Society, refer to the companion text: YOUR HEALTH AND SANITY.

Sabatier
Gift
Philosophical Pub. Co.
1-17-67
617312-2-9

THE PAST AND IMMEDIATE PRESENT

Throughout uncounted centuries, morally and Spiritually-minded men were concerned especially with ONE ALL-IMPORTANT edict as it concerned their destiny. This is simply stated:

"Fear not those who are able to destroy your body,
but those who can destroy body and Soul."¹

The emphasis is placed on the *Soul* of man, THAT BEING the ONLY REALITY, the mental and physical being temporal.

This Divine edict has necessitated restatement as the result of the machinations of an almost unbelievably vicious minority of human creatures, to:

Fear those who by usurped power have the means to destroy man's manhood, thereby making him incapable of thinking, reasoning and bereft of the power of imagination; no longer a human creature, but a robot or zombie, prevented from fulfilling his Divine destiny by making it impossible to awaken the Soul.

The methods employed for this purpose are now admittedly being pursued in America; the real American people generally being the victims. The procedures are the most vicious and diabolical the human mind could conceive.² The express intent, therefore, of this text is to expose these methods, that those who will, may protect themselves and their families by sane, Divinely indicated means at the command of all men and women.

¹This treatise is prepared especially for those who still believe in the existence of God, a *Divine Law*, and that man is possessed of a Soul.

²When the first edition of this book was written nearly all the vicious and inhuman methods were the invention of non-Americans. Many new procedures have been added which are the result of the debased minds of Americans.

PREFACE

"The books that help you most are those
that make you think."—*Theodore Parker*

We heartily agree with this, but enlarge upon it: THE MISSION OF A BOOK IS TO MAKE PEOPLE THINK, REASON, ANALYZE, AND ACT ACCORDING TO THEIR OWN CONCLUSIONS.

The present text has all this in mind and in addition, to offer information, *which if followed, will be of infinite benefit*, especially to Americans, and to humanity as a whole, as well as to expose HORRORS ALMOST BEYOND DESCRIPTION, AND WHOLLY INCOMPREHENSIBLE TO THE AVERAGE SANE MIND. *These diabolical methods have already been successfully practiced in many countries. By the frank admission of their advocates, they are general in America, and are to become universal.*

The direct impetuses for the present volume are several: First, the frank statements contained in *Bertrand Russell's book THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY*, 1953 edition, describing what *Fichte* foresaw would be the common lot of humanity.

Russell is an author accepted by the Intelligensia everywhere, because the Nobel prize has been conferred upon him, and he has held positions in some of the most popular universities.

The second reason is the ever-increasing number of requests we have received from every section of the country to continue our efforts, and render an unbiased opinion, based on the research of the past several years.

Millions of Americans are watching with mounting fear the ever-changing events, and the constantly increasing encroachment upon their personal rights, too stunned to take

protective action. This infringement had its beginning even before the first world war. These Americans, some years ago, as in the past when important issues arose, requested us to investigate and to help them in the manner we did their parents.

The problem of greatest concern to them, as it should be to every American, is the clearly outlined plans for the subjugation by mental demoralization and degeneration of the mass (all but the few) by the demonic methods described by *Bertrand Russell* in his **THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY**, from which we quote, and repeated again and again in order to make the reader conscious of the extreme seriousness of the practices and intentions of the enemies of God and man. To these practices have been added others more insidious and destructive, because the mass *actually* believed them to be for their benefit, and willingly accepted them:

"*Fichte* [according to *Russell*], laid it down that *education*¹ should aim at *destroying free will*, so that after the pupils have left school, *they shall be incapable, throughout the rest of their lives, of thinking or acting otherwise than as their schoolmasters would have wished. . . .*"—**THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY**, Page 50, 1953 edition. *Emphasis ours.*

We wish to emphasize the fact that it is not to be taken for granted, and *we do not* so take it, that either *Russell* or *Fichte* endorsed the method for the degeneration of the minds of men, or for their enslavement. However, if *Fichte* did not endorse such methods, then HE WAS

¹ We will endeavor to prove throughout the text, particularly in **Chapter Five**, that the present educational system, in greater part, in many sections of the country, is now based on this idea, and is successfully carried out to the detriment of the pupils. This statement is based on the admission of many of those in control.

A PROPHET OF THE FIRST ORDER AND FORESAW AND FORECAST WHAT WAS TO HAPPEN. If *Russell* does not endorse the methods indicated, then he simply quoted *Fichte* on what was actually happening at the time *he* wrote *his* book. We quote both, *not* accusing them of advocating the methods described and now practiced. The public, at large, who have read much of the literature on the subject, is becoming panic stricken by the fear that these agents of Satan will find ways and means, as indicated by *Russell*, to employ the various serums and viruses² as one of the means for the success of their plans. The public, unfortunately, is losing more and more of its faith in the medical profession, and respect for their faithful family physician, believing physicians in general guilty.

Their additional fear is that the profession, due to the ever-increasing mass medication, will shortly accept socialized medicine, hence they are turning away from well trained and capable men, to others less trained and competent.

We further quote *Russell* which confirms what others in authority are advocating:

". . . except possibly in the governing aristocracy, all but 5 per cent of males and 30 per cent of females will be sterilized. The 30 per cent of females will be expected to

² Many states are now making every effort to pass compulsory laws which would make it mandatory for children to be inoculated with serums of one type or another. Whatever our personal views on the subject, *we are not here concerned* with their merit or potential for harm, but with the fact that the enemies of God and man, *boldly confess that they have been using injections and will continue to use them, in their diabolical scheme to stop the development of children's minds at a point little beyond that of morons.*

spend the years from eighteen to forty in reproduction,³ in order to secure adequate cannon fodder. As a rule, artificial insemination⁴ will be preferred to the natural method. The unsterilized, if they desire the pleasures of love, will usually have to seek it with sterilized partners.”—Refer to reproduction herein. Emphasis ours.

Russell's conclusions fell far short of what is actually happening at present. He saw only dimly what would be attempted by the enemies of God and man. According to a published report, originating in England, one highly respected in scientific circles, made the statement:

“There must be allowed no mating between the sexes to result in the birth of children, except where and when such births are desirable from the racial point of view.

“The best way to put eugenics into practice is to make it compulsory for all male children to be sterilized soon after birth. . . . Certain male children to be selected strains will be exempt from compulsory sterilization. These children will be carefully selected by a thorough scientific study of their pedigree.

“Any woman desiring to have a child will have to apply to the Eugenic State Authority for the necessary permission. . . . If that [she] is satisfactory, a list of suitable sires will be given her to choose from.

According to formulated plans—and let no one blind himself by the thought that these methods will not be tried, unless

³ You say this cannot be done. With the exception of sterilization, it *was* done during the days of slavery, and in many countries throughout history. What has been done in the past is again possible if awareness does not replace apathy.

⁴ Refer to chapter in present volume dealing with this subject.

the mass awakens to its danger—those who will be permitted the Divine privilege of motherhood, though under animal-like privileges, may experience nothing but sorrow, because perhaps almost immediately following the birth of her child, it will be taken from the mother.

These and other clearly outlined methods for the animalization, robotation, automation and subjugation of men, will, by the frank admission of these enemies of God and man, be the rule of the day, and be as common as are the necessary operations today in our hospitals. Moreover, if the people continue to indulge in "happy pills" and other drugs, there will be little opposition. Should any one wonder that the awakening, real Americans, are seeking means to protect themselves against these horrors, and turning for help and guidance to those whom their fathers trusted in the past?

Specifically, the present text has but one objective: *the welfare of our fellow man*. If we can succeed in arousing Americans to their danger, well and good; if not, we fully recognize that every man has free Will, the right and opportunity, to save or damn himself.

This text is the medium to make known to all and sundry, in unmistakable terms, what the enemies of God and man have *themselves* frankly stated to have been done to the teeming millions; what they are *doing*, *what they propose to do*, and *how they will do it*, in their efforts to change the creature known and accepted by those who professed themselves as Christians, as "God's noblest creation," into morons, robots, and zombies; imbeciles to be enslaved.

To guard against misunderstanding, and the charge of repetition, numerous statements, perhaps in different words or terms, *will be made time and again throughout the text, to impress them more firmly on the mind of the reader*.

It is our contention that he who knowingly permits another, even though that other be his enemy, to be misled, or

harm to come upon him or upon those dear to him, is a traitor to his fellow man, his country and to his God. He is guilty of treason.

So great has become the momentum of treason to the American people, that even many of those in the highest positions whose duty it is to protect their fellow citizens, who by taking the oath of their office, should be the intermediary between the citizens and God in dispensing justice, have flagrantly betrayed their trust, actually turning over the citizenry to the enemy.

Our hope is that this book will be found to be basically different from all others because of our refusal to follow the usual defamation route, and that the reader will recognize that we have given those who have confidence in us, sufficient information to enable them to act as reasonable human beings and, above all, God fearing Americans.

We have added a number of Chapters not included in the Fichte and *Russell* concepts. These are on almost purely American devised methods for the degeneration, demoralization and subjugation of the masses by means of methods they will more readily accept than the European procedures. Among them are the "happy pill" and other drugs, the "snake pit" horrors, the "Civil Rights" Legislation, the plans for an Alaskan "institution" and desegregation *as a means to mongrelization*, and the decadence of all races accepting this idea, and falling victims to it.

Since the publication of the first edition of THE AGE OF TREASON, much has happened. A great amount of diabolism has been revealed, the betrayals of the race are so many, the adulteration of food and water so universal, that it has become necessary to divide the contents of the book into two parts; one devoted entirely to food and water, and how to avoid the pitfalls toward mental degeneracy. This refers to the book YOUR HEALTH AND SANITY. The present volume outlines the other

vicious practices employed for this same purpose. All these diabolical means and methods have the identical ends in view.

Finally, *who* is at fault? *Who* is responsible for these hideous and inhuman practices with worse to follow?

How is it possible that among an intelligent and civilized people the practice of a single one of these vicious practices has become possible? Let us face the facts. It is because we as citizens fail to assume our personal responsibilities in selecting the right Representatives, Legislators and Senators to represent us.

Sincerely given,

R. SWINBURNE CLYMER

First Edition

February sixteenth, 1957

Revised Edition

March twenty-ninth, 1959

THE GREATEST DANGER EVER KNOWN CONFRONTING YOU, YOUR LOVED ONES AND THE ENTIRE RACE

Imagine yourself BECOMING CONSCIOUS you are gradually losing your manhood—that your mind is rapidly deteriorating so that you are no longer able to think clearly; unable to plan your future actions; that your resistance is becoming so weak you are no longer master of actions. In short, that you are rapidly developing into a moron, a robot, a zombie, readily subject to the dictates of others.

Imagine further that your beloved children's mental development is being retarded—that their eyesight is far from normal. That in every respect there is apparent a retrograding influence, away from the highly evolved human toward that of the moron.

A madman's dream you answer! The nightmare of fear mongers!

IS IT? Give us a few moments of your attention while we prove our point and awaken you to reality.

To begin with, turn to the several pages following and you there find reproductions of pages 50 and 51 of the 1953 from *Bertrand Russell's* book: THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY. Read carefully. You will quickly realize that detailed plans were formulated long ago by the enemies of mankind for this very purpose.

AWAKEN TO THE FACT THAT THESE PLANS HAVE ACTUALLY BEEN TRIED ON MILLIONS OF HUMAN BEINGS, THAT PRACTICALLY EVERY ONE OF THEM IS BEING PRACTICED RIGHT HERE IN AMERICA. AT THIS VERY MOMENT, YOU AND YOUR FAMILY MAY UNKNOWINGLY BE INGESTING SOME OF THESE DRUGS IN YOUR FOOD AND WATER, THAT

GRADUALLY ALL BUT THE VERY FEW — ESPECIALLY OF THE WHITE RACE—ARE BEING MADE THE VICTIMS.

Who is the authority for these statements? Not we, but the men and women now engaged in one type or another of these diabolical practices, and those planning to become so engaged.

LEARN HOW YOU MAY PROTECT YOURSELF AND YOUR LOVED ONES.

countries. Fichte laid it down that education should aim at destroying free will, so that, after pupils have left school, they shall be incapable, throughout the rest of their lives, of thinking or acting otherwise than as their schoolmasters would have wished. But in his day this was an unattainable ideal: what he regarded as the best system in existence produced Karl Marx. In future such failures are not likely to occur where there is dictatorship. Diet, injections, and injunctions will combine, from a very early age, to produce the sort of character and the sort of beliefs that the authorities consider desirable, and any serious criticism of the powers that be will become psychologically impossible. Even if all are miserable, all will believe themselves happy, because the government will tell them that they are so.

A totalitarian government with a scientific bent might do things that to us would seem horrifying. The Nazis were more scientific than the present rulers of Russia, and were more inclined towards the sort of atrocities than I have in mind. They were said—I do not know with what truth—to use prisoners in concentration camps as material for all kinds of experiments, some involving death after much pain. If they had survived, they would probably have soon taken to scientific breeding. Any nation which adopts this practice will, within a generation, secure great military advantages. The system, one may surmise, will be something like this: except possibly in the governing aristocracy, all but 5 per cent of males and 30 per cent of females will be sterilized. The 30 per cent of females will be expected to spend the years from eighteen to forty in reproduction, in order to secure adequate cannon fodder. As a rule, artificial insemination will be preferred to the natural method. The unsterilized,

if they desire the pleasures of love, will usually have to seek them with sterilized partners.

Sires will be chosen for various qualities, some for muscle, others for brains. All will have to be healthy, and unless they are to be the fathers of oligarchs they will have to be of a submissive and docile disposition. Children will, as in Plato's *Republic*, be taken from their mothers and reared by professional nurses. Gradually, by selective breeding, the congenital differences between rulers and ruled will increase until they become almost different species. A revolt of the plebs would become as unthinkable as an organized insurrection of sheep against the practice of eating mutton. (The Aztecs kept a domesticated alien tribe for purposes of cannibalism. Their regime was totalitarian.)

To those accustomed to this system, the family as we know it would seem as queer as the tribal and totem organization of Australian aborigines seems to us. Freud would have to be rewritten, and I incline to think that Adler would be found more relevant. The laboring class would have such long hours of work and so little to eat that their desires would hardly extend beyond sleep and food. The upper class, being deprived of the softer pleasures both by the abolition of the family and by the supreme duty of devotion to the State, would acquire the mentality of ascetics: they would care only for power, and in pursuit of it would not shrink from cruelty. By the practice of cruelty men would become hardened, so that worse and worse tortures would be required to give the spectators a thrill.

Such possibilities, on any large scale, may seem a fantastic nightmare. But I firmly believe that, if the Nazis had won the last war, and if in the end they had acquired world supremacy

INTRODUCTION

THE PROPOSED METHODS FOR THE DEMORALIZATION OF MANKIND

**The Plan for a Semi-Moronic, Human Robotic State,
Man's Subjugation by a Highly Organized, Soulless
Few, With an Over-Lord to Reduce Mankind
to a State of Sub-Human Monstrosities
as Breeders of Slaves**

In less than three pages¹ Bertrand Russell in his book, *The Impact of Science on Society*, 1953 edition, details the methods to be pursued easily capable of subjecting the mass of mankind to creatures such as were never dreamed of even by the most violently insane:

"Scientific societies are as yet in their infancy. It may be worthwhile to spend a few moments in speculating as to the possible future developments of those that are oligarchies.²

"It is to be expected that advances in psychology³

¹ Pages 49, 50, 51.

² There is an universal attempt to make all countries such and then bring them under the control of an Over-Lord and a few associates.

³ Not by psychologists, because properly understood, psychology deals with the *Soul* of man; with Spiritual concepts for the purpose of the individualization of the human into the Immortal. That which is usually called psychology and so accepted, is actually mental science and is today almost completely under the dominion of foreign mentally unbalanced psychiatrists with which America is presently overrun, many of whom are in high places.

will give governments much more control over individual mentality than they now have even in totalitarian countries.

To obtain a clear perspective of the numerous plans long prepared for the subjugation of the mass, it is necessary to repeat *Russell's* quotation from Fichte:

"Fichte laid it down that *education should aim at destroying free will*, so that after pupils have left school, they should be incapable, throughout the rest of their lives, of thinking or acting otherwise than as their schoolmasters would have wished. But in his day this was an unattainable ideal: What he regarded as the best system in existence produced Karl Marx. In the future such failures are not likely to occur where there is a dictatorship⁴; *diet*,⁵ *injections*,⁶ and *inunctions* will combine, from a very early age, to produce the sort of character and the sort of belief⁷ that the authorities consider desirable, and any serious criticism⁸ of the powers will become psychologically impossible. Even if all are miserable, all will believe themselves happy,⁹ because the government will tell them they are happy.

"A totalitarian government with a scientific bend might do things that would seem horrifying.¹⁰ The Nazis

⁴ This would be attained by the establishment of a World Government, the dream of the United Nations.

⁵ Thoroughly dealt with in the companion volume: *Your Health and Sanity*.

⁶, ⁷, ⁸ Fully considered in the present volume.

⁹ To be attained by the various methods of brain washing practiced by the Communists and actively practiced in America, by many forms of propaganda.

¹⁰ Here is an admission by an accepted authority that the methods in mind would only "seem" horrifying. What will be

were more scientific than the present rulers of Russia,¹¹ and were more inclined towards the sort of atrocities than I have in mind.

"They were said—I do not know with what truth—to use prisoners in concentration camps as material for all kinds of experiments, some involving death after much pain. If they had survived, they would probably have soon taken to scientific breeding.¹²

"Any nation which adopts this practice will, within a generation, secure great military advantages. The system, one may surmise, will be something like this: except possibly in the governing aristocracy,¹³ all but 5 per cent of males and 30 per cent of females will be sterilized. . . .¹⁴ The 30 per cent of females will be expected [compelled] to spend the years from eighteen to forty in reproduction, in order to secure adequate cannon fodder. As a rule, artificial insemination,¹⁵ will be preferred to the natural method. The unsterilized, if they desire the pleasure of love,¹⁶ will have to seek them with sterilized partners.

the result when the men selected to carry out the "scientific" procedures have become fully hardened, and *how will the reader know he, his children, or grandchildren will not be the victims?* This is not science, but *Science Profaned*.

¹¹ Fully treated in present volume.

¹² Refer to quotation in *Introduction*.

¹³ This "governing aristocracy" would naturally be composed *only* of those in power, all the rest of humanity would be in a worse condition than animals: robots, morons, zombies, in human form, possibly retaining part of their thinking ability, but unable to fulfil God's greatest intent — to be Co-Creators with Him.

¹⁴ and ¹⁵ Fully treated in the present volume.

¹⁶ The author uses the word "love." Such a thing is wholly unknown to the sterilized because, when any form of sterilization is performed in a person during the age of potency, unless

"Sires¹⁷ will be chosen for various qualities, some for muscles, others for brains. All [so chosen] will have to be healthy, and unless they are to be the fathers of oligarchs they will have to be of a submissive or docile disposition.¹⁸

"Gradually, by selective breeding, the congenital differences between rulers and ruled will increase until they become almost a different species.¹⁹

"To those accustomed to this system, the family as we know it would seem as queer as the tribal and totem organization of Australian aborigines seem to us. . . . The laboring classes [all but the very few] would have such long hours of work and so little to eat that their desires would hardly be beyond sleep and food.

"The upper class, being deprived of the softer pleasures both by the abolition of the family and by the supreme duty of devotion to the State, would acquire the mentality of ascetics: they would CARE ONLY FOR POWER and in pursuit of it would not shrink from cruelty.²⁰ By the prac-

it be necessary because of disease, he or she is no longer capable of actual love. It would be the worst kind of carnality; bestiality between humans.

¹⁷ This practice was more or less general during the days of slavery.

¹⁸ This would be assured by medication in food and water preventing the development of the mind beyond a certain point. This is already being done extensively in America, and no doubt in other countries. Refer to companion volume: *Your Health and Sanity*.

¹⁹ The "ruled" or governed [enslaved] would revert to the prehistoric type of man, but be less human; more automatic; practically incapable of thinking for themselves.

²⁰ This is being amply demonstrated in all countries under subjection, and where undeclared war is in progress. Power and possession alone are given consideration. If published reports in newspapers and magazines are based on truth, then many active

tice of cruelty men would become hardened, so that worse and worse tortures would be required to give them a thrill.

"To prevent these scientific horrors, democracy is necessary, but not sufficient. There must also be that kind of respect for the individual that inspired the doctrine of the Rights of Man. As an absolute theory the doctrine cannot be accepted. As *Bentham* said: 'Rights of man, nonsense; inprescriptive rights of man, nonsense on stilts.' We must admit that there are gains to the community so great that for their sake it *becomes right to inflict injustice on an individual*.

"This may happen, to take an obvious example, if a victorious enemy demands hostages as the price of not destroying a city.²¹ The city authorities cannot be blamed in such circumstances, if they deliver the required number of hostages. In general, the 'Rights of Man' must be subject to the supreme consideration of the general welfare. But having admitted this, we must go on to assert, and to assert emphatically, that there are injuries which it is hardly in the general interest to inflict on innocent individuals.

"The doctrine is important because the holders of power, especially in an oligarchy, will be much too prone, on each occasion, to think that this is one of those cases in which the doctrine should be ignored.

steps are being taken in America to make many of these practices legally possible.

²¹ This is a specious argument. It is certain that no nation, however vicious, would commit overt acts if convinced that other nations not at war with it, would condemn it and would have no commerce with it, and that all civilized nations would exact justice for the victims. No nation, however great, can long exist as an outcast from all other nations. An example of this is found in the story of Cain.

"Totalitarianism has a theory as well as a practice. As a practice, it means that a certain group, having by one means or another²² seized the apparatus of power, especially armaments and police, proceed to explore their advantageous position to the utmost, by regulating every one in the manner that gives them the maximum control over others.²³ But as a theory it is somewhat different; it is the doctrine that the State, or the nation, or the community is capable of a good that is different from that of individuals, and not consisting of anything that individuals think or feel.

"The difficulty of this theory is that it extends illegitimately the analogy between a social organism and a single person as an organism. The government, as opposed to its individual members, is not sentient; it does not rejoice at a victory or suffer at a defeat. When the body politics is injured, whatever pain is to be felt must be felt by its members, not by it as a whole.

²² This may be accomplished by war, or insidiously by a country's lawmakers [treasonable to the people in act, if not intent], enacting Laws by edicts not based on constitutional right, taking away the inherent rights of the people. These methods are safest for those seeking control. There is only one means of safety: "Eternal Vigilance," and alert watchfulness of those chosen by the people to represent them; ousting those from office, however high that office may be, at their first offense against the rights and liberties of the people.

²³ As already stated, this is easily accomplished by means of Toxic additives in food and drinking water, drugs, serums, viruses, operations and other methods already in practice and have *as their purpose and effect the deterioration of the mind*, making it incapable to think, and so weaken the Will so it will be easier for the victim to obey than make decisions for himself. All of these methods have been tried, and are in operation at the moment—according to the admission of those who now practice them, or who have practiced them—right here in America.

"With the body of a single person it is otherwise: all pains are felt at the center. If the different parts of the body had pains that the central ego did not feel, they might have their separate interests, and need a Parliament to decide whether the toes should give way to the fingers or the fingers to the toes. As this is not the case, a single person is an ethical unit.²⁴ Neither parts of a person or organization of many persons can occupy the same position of ethical importance. The good of a multitude is a sum of the good of the individuals composing it, not a new or separate good. In concrete fact, when it is pretended that the State has a 'good' different from that of the citizen, what is really meant is that the 'good' of the government or of the ruling class²⁵ is more important than that of other

²⁴ The single person of a free people must have *greater rights and privileges than the government has power, because the congregation of single persons Create, Sustain and Give the State Its Existence and Authority*, and such authority to be administered at, and by, the Will of the people as a whole. Any infringement or imposition on the rights of the people will throw the entire machinery out of order, and injustice will increase by leaps and bounds. Perhaps it is the fault of the people themselves because they are not alert to their duty as well as their rights. As a result of their lethargy and failure of their duty as citizens they must suffer.

The only salvation for the race is in becoming conscious of the fact that by *permitting an injustice to any member of the whole, they set into motion a force which forever and ever reacts upon themselves, and will, as a result of their loss or suffering, awaken them, and cause them to make every effort to right the wrong their neglect permitted to develop*. All history shows that there is a given pattern followed by the action of the Governing Law which no man, however great, can restrain.

²⁵ In a properly functioning free republic there can be no such thing as a "ruling class." Those elected or selected to office, however high that office may be, are *at best no more than the*

people. Such a view can have no basis except in arbitrary power.

servants, the representatives, of the people as a whole. They were elected or selected—employed by the people—for a period of time, and should always be removable and replaceable.

CHAPTER ONE*

Injections or Inunctions for the Limitation or the Deterioration of the Human Mind, Making Those So Treated Readily Subservant to Selected Directors

"... Injections and Inunctions¹ will COMBINE, FROM A VERY EARLY AGE, TO PRODUCE THE SORT OF CHARACTER AND THE SORT OF BELIEFS THE AUTHORITIES CONSIDER DESIRABLE. . ." *Fichte*, quoted by *Bertrand Russell* in *THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY*, 1953 Edition.

Fortunately, there are indications that many physicians no longer believe in the employment of viruses and serums for the prevention of diseases. This number is increasing daily, due to the fact that physicians, like the laity, are becoming more fully informed regarding the plans of the enemies of God and man, to make use of these agents for their infamous purpose.

*All material that appeared in the first edition of *The Age of Treason* and used in the present volume, will be headed *Chapters*. All additional material will be entitled *Sections*. No attempt is made at continuity of subjects, our one desire being to reveal the dangers confronting the mass, and the possible means of avoiding them.

¹ As a preliminary statement, our concern is not *basically* whether inoculations and inunctions are a preventative or cure of disease, or the harm they may do, *but to find out what Toxic substances serums and viruses may contain for the deterioration of the minds of those so treated, which could be infinitely worse than any disease from which man suffers. This fear is based on the statements of those who in print or otherwise, have endorsed the use of serums and viruses for sinister purposes.*

"An INS Washington dispatch dated June 22, 1955, said that two scientists testifying before a House Commerce sub-committee urged the withholding of Salk vaccine inoculations till 'a safe vaccine' should be produced; and two other scientists 'raised the possibility that his (Dr. Salk's) vaccine might damage kidneys on some inoculated persons'."

Due to the prominence of Dr. Russell's book, **THE IMPACT OF SCIENCE ON SOCIETY**, these ideas received much attention and discussion among those in America with advanced formal education, and naturally the statement of these scientists instilled a fear in the minds of millions of what *might* possibly be done to the minds of the human race *vide* inoculations; especially to children, considering the millions to be inoculated.

This fear was in no wise lessened when the people (the mass) read articles in various newspapers and magazines and a multiplicity of booklets similar to the one quoted, relative to these subjects. These fears are due principally to two specific reasons with which those who are opposed to inoculations have little to do:

1. Constant propaganda.

2. What accepted scientists and the enemies of mankind boldly say can be done to children's mentality, by means of inoculations with serums which *in themselves* are possibly innocent, but which have been tampered with, and prepared according to formula of the enemies of mankind.

Few recognize that propaganda is a form of advertising; that in effect, it is really a subtle type of "brain-washing," *repeatedly making impressions on the mind of a person, until he accepts it as true*. This is a highly satisfactory means for converting the mass to any idea desired, though like all subtle agents, it has its drawback:

There is a Law of protection governed by another Law, that of (mental) REaction well understood by the

true psychologist. Unless there is a complete mental subjection and emotional conditioning, or adjustment to the idea, there is, after a certain time, or certain stage is reached, a REACTION, and that which was accepted as an absolute truth, is changed into a revulsion, an absolute loss of confidence, and replaced by fear. Religious conversion from one faith to another can be cited as an example.

That advertising, as well as propaganda, is a form of brainwashing is readily demonstrated and easily understood. Take an everyday occurrence as example: my lady's use of a detergent. She has found her regular product altogether satisfactory. She wants no other.

Now there is a new discovery advertised day after day on the radio or television. At first she sees and hears, but does not pay much attention to it. Shortly it begins to attract her attention. Then she begins to wonder if it is really better than what she has been using and doubt replaces confidence. She concludes it might be well to try it. *She is "sold."*

Shakespeare even in his time was aware of this Law of mental reaction, and in substance, stated so in a few words:

"Me thinks she protests TOO much."

If a person is innocent, to deny may restore confidence, but to *repeatedly* deny, has the opposite effect; it arouses doubt and suspicion.

The American newspapers, believing they, by their methods, were serving a great cause, time and again urged parents to have their children immunized against polio, were forced to frankly admit that they failed to arouse the parents to action. They did their duty as they saw it, but failed to recognize the fact that their insistence of what should be done was actually a reverse "brain-washing." They had at first succeeded in what they tried to do, then undid it by their *continued* efforts, bringing about mental REACTION; arousing fear in place of confidence.

The grave problem which continually confronts the public is not: Will inoculation prevent polio? "*Is it possible,*" as Fitche, *vie Russell* and the enemies of mankind claim, "*to so prepare the serum with an agent potent enough to stultify the minds of children, making them morons, or near imbeciles?*"

Who can tell, or be trusted to tell, whether or not, and when, such elements might be incorporated in the serum — any serum — to be used, and finally: Would YOU have your children inoculated with it? Fear once instilled, is difficult to eradicate, and it HAS BEEN INSTILLED THOROUGHLY AND COMPLETELY IN THE MINDS OF MILLIONS OF PEOPLE.

While it is unquestionably true that the greater part of the American newspapers have been encouraging parents to have their children inoculated, it cannot be denied that many newspapers have, from time to time, reported undesirable effects and even deaths, as a result of the inoculations. Whether or not such deaths were actually the result of the serum, or induced by other causes, it is impossible to say, but it *is* certain that such reports were not only local, but widely circulated, and have greatly added to the fear of serum therapy.

If these reports are added to what has been said, written and published, on the deterioration of man's mind by various means, especially by serums, man's fears are readily understandable. These reports of harmful results, or deaths, have been republished in leaflets, magazines and books, and are so widely circulated that there is today hardly a person who has not some knowledge of actual, or reported ill-effects.

The enemies of God and mankind, by their own admission, have used, or plan to employ, inoculations for the purpose of destroying mental balance, making it impossible for the minds of children to develop beyond a more or less moronic or robotic degree, and this has instilled fear into the minds of many parents.

There has also been awakened in the minds of many phy-

sicians a fear, that the methods followed in introducing the Salk vaccine were merely the opening wedge to State or Socialized medicine. The American Medical Association has been especially sensitive to this after purportedly spending millions in educating their members and the people against any form of socialized medicine.

One physician, Gordon B. Lettch, M. Sc., M.D., in an article entitled A STEP TOWARD SOCIALIZED MEDICINE, published in the magazine NATURAL FOOD AND FARMING, Volume 2, No. 10, January, 1956, and circulated among many of America's *health conscious people*, questioned the merits of the serum, and equally so the method pursued in propagandizing it:

"Does the Salk vaccine program constitute a brain-wash to condition Americans for the docile acceptance of regimented medicine?

"Many physicians, thoughtful and disturbed by the anti-polio vaccine imbroglio, think that it does.

"Let it be stated now, since the Salk vaccine resulted from patronage of the National Foundation for Infantile Paralysis, that no attack on the Foundation is intended². The tremendous services performed in aiding research, education and patient care in polio are well known and are duly appreciated by every physician familiar with the disease. However, this appreciation need not blind one

² It is well to repeat that what was said in the Introduction of this text in no sense was, or is, an intent to criticize or condemn any one. The purpose primarily is (1) to accept seriously the intent of enemies of God and of mankind, and those who they have completely brainwashed to their plan: (2) to awaken the minds of the people to give serious thought to the plan of reducing mankind to a quick mental decadence, so that *the mass* may be used for purely selfish purposes by the enemy; and (3) to consider with equal seriousness every possible means to avoid becoming the victims.

to the facts of the polio vaccine fiasco, and it certainly does not render the Foundation immune to criticism for its foray into politics.

"Since laymen, not scientists, are dominant in polio foundation affairs, it is not strange that well-intentioned enthusiasm may lead them into strange pathways or even astray, scientifically speaking. Ordinarily it is expected that he who pays the piper may call the tune. But in the realm of science, as the Salk vaccine affair well illustrates, this can be downright dangerous.

THE QUESTION OF MERIT

"Consideration of the merit of the Salk vaccine would not usually be included in an article of this kind. But the question of merit is most pertinent³ because it affords the first link in the chain of events suggesting brainwash.

"A truly scientific approach to solving a medical problem calls for repeated and still more repeated trials of method, experiment and observation. Preferably the repetition should be widely scattered among independent scientists. When what seems like a logical conclusion and a consensus of opinion appears, this in turn is subjected to further investigation until oft-repeated confirmations remove all doubt.

"Admittedly, this is a time-consuming, cumbersome and laborious process; and it can be expensive. It rarely produces the spectacular, but it does deliver results which are safe, sound and acceptable until disproved by further

³ We repeat: the concern is actually not so much whether or not the Salk vaccine will prevent polio, though this is of prime importance, but whether it, or any other serum, could be made a medium in the hands of those specially trained, to carry out the intent stated by Russell, avowed militant socialists, and viciously inclined Communists.

investigations utilizing the same proved scientific methods.

"This orderly, ponderous but safe method was short-circuited to a considerable extent in the case of the Salk vaccine program in order to put the show on the road by a certain deadline date. The speed-up did nothing to allay the misgivings of physicians and scientists who, recognizing the possibility of built-in defect in the vaccine, wished more evidence and assurance than were forthcoming.

"To date, the only *lasting* immunity against virus diseases that produce an immunity—not all do—results from an attack of the disease itself or by inoculation with a weakened strain of the virus, or one closely related to it, which can create immunity without producing the disease, as in the case of smallpox. In either case the virus which stimulates immunity is alive.

"By contrast the Salk vaccine is based on the presence of a *killed* virus.

"This departure from established experience does not mean that Dr. Jonas Salk and his associates are not on a correct track in their pioneer investigation. Indeed, scientists the world over acclaim the ingenuity displayed, even while they await time-tested proof that a new approach to the problem of virus immunology may have been charted.

"At the same time many wonder if any immunity produced by the Salk vaccine is not in fact due to the presence of *live* virus, in keeping with long immunological experience, with the reliance for safety placed on the presence of minute, non-demonstrable amounts, rather than upon the use of weakened strains of polio virus. It was doubt on this score which led to *British rejection* of the Salk vaccine in favor of continuing their independent search to obtain a strain which would be safe to inoculate and would create desired immunity.

SALK VACCINE REMAINS UNPROVEN

"Though favorable data seems to be accumulating, it remains a fact that insufficient time and testing have elapsed to determine whether any immunity conferred through use of the Salk vaccine is transient, or lasting, or indeed whether there may be instances in which immunity is lacking. Therefore, as things stand, in spite of its hopeful promise and no matter how efficacious the product may eventually prove to be, the Salk vaccine today stands unproven, and still in the experimental stages. This was even more the case in 1954 before the inception of mass trials — a fact causing widespread physician misgivings at the time, not quieted by subsequent events.

"Thus, in the face of lack of adequate scientific proof of safety and efficacy—the widespread and independent repetition and confirmation of Dr. Salk's hopeful conclusion—*a mass medical experiment*, using humans as test animals, was decreed, sponsored and carried out in supposedly unregimented America. And we condemned the human medical experimenters of Buchenwald!

"It is true the human victims of Buchenwald had no choice but to submit to experiments decreed by their captors or die, while those designed in America retained full freedom to remain outside the experiment. Both programs involved coercion. At Buchenwald it was physical force. In America it was mental pressure — brain-washing — playing on the fears of one of the more spectacular and dread diseases, one which creates terror out of all proportion to its incidence and to its actual seriousness."

As indicated, the fear of Polio created by the propaganda has run its course, and has backfired by a replacement of much deeper fear: That it may be employed, as brazenly proclaimed by the enemies of God and mankind, as an agent to make morons,

robots, and mental degenerates out of those inoculated. *This is the greater fear now.* The propaganda has not been potent enough to bring about a *complete mental subjection of the mass*, with the result that it has reacted, replacing a first state of faith, by fear.

So great has this fear or mistrust become, that actually millions having lost confidence in their family physician, [who in good faith endorsed the Salk vaccine], have been thrown into the arms of non-medical practitioners. If anyone doubts this, let him question the ever-increasing number who now regularly consult non-medical men for the treatment of their ailments.

There is another and seldom recognized form of opposition to Compulsory Mass Medication. This aspect is clearly stated in a communication received just before the first edition of THE AGE OF TREASON went to press from a person involved in a like situation:

"My people left Germany⁴ because they were not permitted to practice that form of religion which appealed to their hearts and Souls; a religion which to them was both natural in its relation to life, and Spiritual in its incentive to devotion and worship of God.

"They believed, as many people still believe, that the Constitution of the United States guarantees the right and privilege to worship as our Spiritual nature dictates. However, now our Spirit is in travail. If proposed Laws become effective, compelling us to have our children inoculated, which we believe to be *pollution of the blood*

⁴ Regretfully proponents made some very unkind and sneering remarks concerning the members of numerous Sectarian units living in Pennsylvania, ignoring the fact that powerful groups of what may be classed as "Sectarians" live in other States, and are unquestionably accepted amongst America's most respected citizens.

and wholly against the Will and Laws of God, what are we to do? *What can we do?* If we disobey as commanded of us by the Spiritual teachings of our Church which we believe is the Word of God, we will invite persecution and possible imprisonment. If we obey such Laws, then our Conscience will continually and eternally condemn us. Our Master, the *Nazarene*, taught that man cannot obey *two Masters*. Who, under the *Divine Law*, must we accept as master?

"There is another vitally important point to consider in relation to such Compulsory Laws: It is no mystery that certain minority religious groups, because of their number and influence, have been granted immunity in at least some States. Is it justice that because of their close organization such groups should be exempt from obedience to Compulsory Laws while others not so organized, must obey? Is it justice that strongly organized groups should be granted privileges and immunities denied minority groups?

"Will not such Compulsory Mass Medication practices abhorrent to men whose faith is still strong in God and His word, build up mass antagonism and resistance, and does not history amply show that when such antagonism and resistance quietly built up reaches its maximum strength among a usually peaceful people like Americans, for example, it becomes a grave danger to the peace of the nation? What is the answer?

"If it finally comes to pass that the deepest religious beliefs in what is right or wrong, can be brushed aside and men compelled to do that which they feel condemns them, is it not then certain that Constitutional rights no longer exist and that Article 13, of the abhorrent and un-American *Human Rights* of the United Nations has actually superseded the Constitution:

" 'Freedom to manifest one's religion or belief shall be

subject only to such limitations⁵ as are pursuant to law and are reasonable and necessary to protect public safety, order, health, or morals or the fundamental rights and freedom of others.'

"Who is to prescribe the 'limitation,' and who is to dictate the 'necessities'? Where is the limit?"

Pennsylvania has the dubious honor of being the first state in the union to introduce a bill in her General Assembly to make Polio immunization compulsory for all children in both private and public schools, with a strong hint that this may be followed with, and include, compulsory inoculation of all children for various other diseases.

Ever since the beginning of the formation of a United States of America, and a *free* America, the word COMPULSION has been to EVERY REAL AMERICAN like some thing red is believed to be to an infuriated bull, and there is good reason for this, because the Pilgrims came to America for the one all-embracing reason — TO ESCAPE COMPULSIONS, AND BE ALLOWED FREEDOM OF ACTION, IF SUCH ACTION DOES NOT INTERFERE WITH THE RIGHTS OF OTHERS.

Pennsylvania may some day⁶ succeed in enacting such compulsory legislation, but it should be the last state to attempt it. WHY? Because Pennsylvania was peopled largely by the various Sectarians who fled from Germany, that they might have religious and every other freedom.

⁵ Unfortunately, perhaps most fortunately "*such limitations*" have already been reached by a nation-wide interference with the age long practices of the Christian religion. Refer to the Chapter: "*A Return to the First Century: Germany and England Before the Pilgrims Left for America*" (present volume).

⁶ The proposed *Compulsory Inoculation Act* failed passage.

IN THEIR RELIGION IS INGRAINED AN ALMOST OVERPOWERING BELIEF THAT IT IS SINFUL, AGAINST GOD'S DIVINE LAW, TO POLLUTE THE BLOOD BY ANY MEANS WHATSOEVER, AND THAT MAN SHOULD FORFEIT LIFE ITSELF RATHER THAN COMMIT THIS SIN AGAINST GOD AND THE SOUL. TO THIS INGRAINED BELIEF HAS NOW BEEN ADDED A WHOLESOME FEAR, THAT IN SOME SERUM WILL BE IMPLANTED A SUBSTANCE TO DEGENERATE HUMAN REASON, AND MAKE OF MAN A ROBOT, A HUMAN MONSTROSITY.

The question many ask is:

"Can any Legislature enact Laws that will interfere with man's natural and religious convictions, and force men and their families to be inoculated against their will? If this is done, can this be harmonized with the Constitutional guarantee of personal liberty, for which they left their Fatherland, as well as with the strong antagonism of many physicians against mass medication?"

Two very important facts must be faced, facts which may be suppressed for a time, but which will be certain to flare up with intensified force. These millions who left Germany and other countries that they might be free from religious interference, were almost all disciples of Father Kneipp and his Nature cure, and their faith in these methods of procedure, is, in many instances, still stronger than in any medical practice. Inoculation to them is "blood pollution."

Any such compulsory acts would place many physicians in a most serious dilemma. By his physician's oath the physician is obligated to serve his patients to the **BEST OF HIS KNOWLEDGE AND ABILITY WHILE NOT INTERFERING WITH THEIR CONVICTION OR CONSCIENCE**. He is aware that to impose something upon them in which they do not believe, OR OF WHICH THEY ARE IN DEADLY FEAR, is to destroy their faith;

and faith in their religion, and in the physician⁷ is frequently the most important factor in saving a patient's life. On the other hand, he is also bound to obey civil law. His patient may be one of the most respected and influential citizens in the community, and to act in opposition to his will, may mean ostracism among his friends. **WHAT IS HE GOING TO DO ABOUT IT?** History is replete with instances where a people forced to do that which brings **SELF-CONDEMNATION OF THEIR CONSCIENCE UPON THEM**, causes them to build up a fury against those they feel are their oppressors, which nothing other than the oppressor's downfall can finally calm. What will the answer be?

Dr. David B. Allman, of Atlantic City, when elected President of the American Medical Association, is reported to have told several hundred medical students of Jefferson Medical College that:

"Doctors must have convictions concerning a great power, and must have religious faith beyond the science of medicine." — *Emphasis ours.*

This is the Soul's revealment of the *true* physician; of the American *spirit* at its best; of the humanitarian whose Soul is in his profession. The question is: *How* will the physician react when called upon to impose upon a patient any form of treatment, or procedure, which is against the patient's religious conviction, and by the acceptance of which he will feel condemned by God? How can the physician justify his physician's oath, *and* obey compulsory civil laws?

Again speaking to physicians and future practitioners, Dr. Allman is reported as saying:

"Physicians feel as close to this great Power as anyone can

⁷ Physicians of great reputation freely recognize that religious convictions and faith are mighty forces in the curing of the ill.

get when they have human lives in their minds . . . Doctors recognize *the need for faith and hope in the sick.*" *Philadelphia Inquirer*, March 29, 1957. — *Emphasis ours.*

What a pity, aye, what a crime, that men possessed of such convictions as Dr. Allman's, are not placed in charge of our great hospitals, homes for the aged and crippled, and insane asylums. It is certain that if they were, "snake pits" and diabolical operations, would soon be a thing of an unbelievable past.

DO SCHOOL BOARDS NOW POSSESS THE AUTHORITY CONFERRED UPON LEGISLATORS?

As already noted, in 1957, the solons of the State of Pennsylvania made every effort to pass a Law making Polio inoculation of children attending school, mandatory. It failed ingloriously.

In the present year, of 1959, two bills, one in the House of Representatives, one in the Senate have been presented. These bills are most cleverly written, combining Polio immunization with accepted smallpox vaccination.

Why all this effort to legislate for such enactments when there is a most simple and easy way to achieve the same ends?

School Board Makes Polio Inoculation Compulsory according to an AP dispatch, published February 4, 1959, in the *Journal-Herald*, Dayton, Ohio, and in various other newspapers under the following heading:

Pupils Not Inoculated Barred From School

"Kearney, N. J., Feb. 4—(AP)—Twenty-one students were barred from public schools here because they weren't inoculated against polio.

"The board of education made the inoculations mandatory last September. Those students barred were informed

they would be kept from classes until they complied with the inoculation order."

The question is: Do edicts by groups of men supersede all legislation, all constitutional rights, all trials by jury? Is the mass wholly at the mercy of the self-selected few?

POSTSCRIPT:

Latest reports indicate that there is a great deal of opposition to the enactment of laws making polio "shots" compulsory in the State of Pennsylvania. It also appears, according to published reports ("Philadelphia Inquirer" April 6, 1959) that to their eternal credit, physicians of the State in general are not in favor of such a mandatory law. And why not? Perhaps in their wisdom gained by experience, they recognize that this would be just another step in the effort to destroy all personal liberty, and, also toward socialized medicine.

Beginning with the Salk vaccine, a greater change, NOT to the benefit of the physician, took place. Prior thereto, any discovery in medicine, was tested out by the physician and if approved, pharmaceutical houses produced it. With the Salk vaccine it was much different. It was from Salk to the pharmaceutical houses, experimental procedures, Government approval. For the first time in medical history the physician had little or nothing to do with it except to accept and use it.

Now another step has been taken toward controls. This is the "newly developed" FOUR-IN-ONE vaccine, claimed to protect against polio, diphtheria, whooping cough, and tetanus. An official public health service said that the Government (not by the physicians' approval of it) has licensed two pharmaceutical firms to make the vaccine—The *Arizona Republic*, Phoenix, March 26, 1959.

The next step indicated by the many attempts being made to make Salk polio "shots" mandatory, will no doubt be to do the same with this new combination of viruses. If this is brought about the physician will be little more than a servant; he will be compelled by compulsory laws, to do that which he, as an experienced physician, might not believe in, or approve of. He is then no longer the honored physician. What of the people, the mass? No matter, they are expendables.

CHAPTER ONE

Section One

Are Serums the Proper Treatment for the Prevention of the Asian Flu? Are There No Other Means at the Command of the Physician? What Is the Official Opinion?

It appears that according to published reports, the officials of the Pure Food and Drug Administration maintain that the human system *cannot* by proper food, build up a *Nutritional Status* against the invasion of the Flu, nor fortify itself to assure recovery from it.

"The Food and Drug Administration cracked down on food and drug stores promoting products to 'build up the resistance against Asiatic Flu'."—*The Philadelphia Inquirer*, December 21, 1957.

In contradiction to this "crack down," here is a quote from *The Journal of THE AMERICAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION*.

Special Committee on Influenza

ASIAN INFLUENZA — A SPECIAL REPORT TO PHYSICIANS

"The following report, prepared by a subcommittee consisting of Doctors Cortez F. Enloe, Jr., Chairman, New York; Max L. Lichter, Detroit; and David Henry Poer, Atlanta, Ga., in consultation with the Surgeon General, U. S. Public Health Service, is presented for the guidance of the medical profession by the A.M.A. Special Committee on Influenza and has been authorized for publication in *The Journal*."

Frank W. Barton, Secretary

"The A.M.A. Special Committee on Influenza has arrived at the following conclusions:

"The probability of an epidemic of Asian influenza this fall or winter is great;

"The United States population has no natural immunity to this type of influenza.

THERE IS ACTUALLY NO SPECIFIC THERAPY FOR THE PATIENT WITH ASIAN INFLUENZA. *It is axiomatic that the person in health with the best nutritional status STANDS THE THE BEST CHANCE IN A BOUT OF ANY infectious disease.*"

Vol. 165, No. 4; pp. 356-359, Sept. 28, 1957.

The direct question then is: HOW CAN THIS NUTRITIONAL STATUS *be built up if not by foods rich in vital elements, poor in noxious preservatives and additives, and by organic vitamins and minerals, all articles of diet which, according to report, the Pure Food and Drug Administration has "cracked down" on?*

Is there consistency in such a ruling?

It is becoming generally known that the Federal Food, Drug and Cosmetic Administration cannot legally "crack down" even on any producer, or retailer of any product, even though antibiotics and Toxic substances have been used in their preparation, UNTIL AFTER THEY HAVE BEEN ON THE MARKET for at least a minimum of two years, how then can this department legally "crack down" on food products which are KNOWN, AND CAN BE PROVEN, to contain Vitamins (basic vital elements) and Minerals (health foundation builders) and certainly NO poisons and which millions of physicians prescribe?

If there is such a "crack down," wherein is the justice? Who is the instigator of such action? How is it logical to prohibit foods rich in essential health elements, yet permit the sale of hundreds of Toxic infiltrated products? The people seek an answer.

The latest of what appears to many American citizens as a wanton act, is the Department's reported seizure of an anti-septic long known and used by millions of American people, which can hardly be considered as a poison, because it is not for internal medication. This action has been given great prominence by the ADVERTISING AGE, in an Editorial, October 28, 1957, and in the interest of fair play and justice, is here reproduced together with comments:

"The seizure of Listerine by the Food and Drug Administration was a shocker, and one which deserves careful study.

"We are not too clear about the whole thing, beyond the fact that the seizure was made on a mislabeling charge, in connection with advertising which claimed that Listerine would kill Asian flu germs, as well as other germs¹. Until we discover precisely what is at issue, it is difficult to figure out that this action by Food and Drug, based on advertising designed to strike a timely note to be marking a new and dangerous pathway."

Flu Ballyhoo

"We can add also that the U.S. Health Service and

¹ An untold millions of people, including reliable physicians, believe that antiseptics kill germs. It is uncontradictable that the entire practice of medicine, the procedure in all hospitals, is based on this idea.

It is also generally accepted that many contagious diseases have their origin in the throat; that if the germs of such diseases are destroyed by antiseptics, the illness is prevented. Certainly no antiseptic, as such, can *cure* a disease, but where is the proof that it cannot *prevent the development of the disease?* The writer has never made use of *Listerine*, and is unaware that *Listerine ever laid claim that it cured disease, merely that it killed the germs that "might" encourage the invasion of disease.*

the medical profession² in general do not, by any means, look good in connection with the Asian flu situation. Here is a disease, admittedly of generally mild course, which has been ballyhooed out of all proportion, apparently for the benefit of a handful of vaccine producers, druggists and maybe doctors.³

"Now Food and Drug says *Listerine* has a lot of nerve advertising that it can be helpful with Asiatic flu, but the government officially says inoculation is the thing—the while there is plenty of medical opinion that the inoculation is worse than the disease.

"It's an impertinent question, but nevertheless there is some point to it—are we to be bilked only under 'official' auspices?"

The debacle that first started with the probability of an onset of the Asiatic flu and has continued throughout, has placed the medical profession in an unenviable spot. Opinions such as that of Dr. Thomas G. Ward, Associate Professor of the University of Notre Dame's Llobund Laboratories, and

² This can not be considered as a fair appraisal of a greater number of physicians in connection with the cause and treatment of the Asiatic flu. From all that has been learned it would appear that by far the majority of physicians considered this attack little else than a more or less severe cold; that they advocated the use of antiseptics for gargle; believe natural foods, though a light diet; vitamins and minerals; rest and general medication, to be the proper procedure.

³ While decidedly not agreeing with the acts of the Food and Drug Department in relation to natural vitamin, mineral rich foods to prevent disease, nor their action against *Listerine*, Americans as a whole do not believe that the average American physician has any thought, or desire, to profit at their expense. True, the actions of some might cause many to think so, but actually it is not true.

reportedly published in the *New York Times*, has not "saved face" for America's real physicians, nor has it increased the faith of millions, in serums, generally.

"The physician who directed tests of the new Asian influenza vaccine for the United States Health Service said today he would not take the vaccine himself. The seriousness of the new influenza strain has been over-emphasized, he added.

"The physician, Dr. Thomas G. Ward, associate professor of the University of Notre Dame's Llobund Laboratories, said he would rather build up immunity [how, if not by natural food, their derivatives, vitamins and minerals?] than accept the limited protection of the vaccine.

"This is a mild illness, worse than a cold, but in the vast majority of cases not at all serious," Dr. Ward said.

"The real danger is to persons over 60 and under 3."

To more strongly impress our position, we repeat: Our concern is not directly with the serum advocated for the prevention and cure of the Asian Flu, but, remembering the threat as indicated by *Fitche* and repeated by Russell, regarding the use to which serums are to be put.

The question to be answered: WHEN AND HOW WILL SERUMS AND VIRUSES BE IMPREGNATED FOR THE PURPOSE of the *deterioration of men's minds, often resulting in insanity?* This is our concern. *Certainly a legitimate one.*

The Asian Flu Serum

The lack of faith generally in the Asian flu serum must also be considered as at least a lessening of faith, by a great portion of the public, in the Salk Polio vaccine.

In the December 27, 1957 issue of *The Poliomyelitis Inquirer*, there appeared, in large headlines, the following item:

"New York, Dec. 26.—Hundreds of thousands of doses of outdated Salk vaccine may have to be destroyed because of the manufacturers' overstocked inventories, the Health News Institute said today. . . .

"Because the supply has outstripped the demand [the refusal of the public to accept it], he [the spokesman for the Health Service Institute] said, manufacturers 'may have to destroy hundreds of thousands of doses of vaccine that have become outdated.'

"This is tragic," the spokesman said, "when you consider that there are about 45 million persons under forty years old who have had no polio vaccination yet."

Children Unvaccinated

"The National Foundation for Infantile Paralysis has reported that there are still 16 million children and youths under 20 who are unvaccinated.

"Several hundred thousand cubic centimeters of vaccine, because outdated, were destroyed last year, the spokesman said."

There were numerous causes for the non-acceptance of polio vaccination by the people. One of them is due to the manner—considered by many reputable physicians as UNethical—in which the Salk vaccine was introduced to the public—almost shoved down their throats—by the Government and Pharmaceutical houses—instead of by the physicians, as for instance, Insulin for Diabetes, or Penicillin for infections. This was also considered a slap at their intelligence as physicians; and, secondly, because many physicians, if they did not outright condemn both the product and the procedure, were lukewarm to it.

The coldness to the Asiatic flu serum is a direct result of the Polio vaccine debacle. This revulsion against what is known as "protective" serums and viruses, is constantly increasing among the laity, and now includes more and more physicians of prominence whose reputation and experience cannot be questioned.

Anent to this statement, we quote from a lengthy article in the *Evening Bulletin*, Philadelphia, Pa., December 31, 1957 edition:

**Salk's Safety Test Disputed
Nobel Prize Winner Testifies Critically**

"Oakland, Calif., Dec. 31—(AP)—The Nobel Prize-winning director of the University of California virus laboratory, has challenged the testimony of Dr. Jonas Salk in the \$365,000 damage suit against the Cutter Laboratory of Berkeley.

"In a long deposition introduced as evidence for both the plaintiffs and defense, Dr. Salk described the safety test used before the serum was placed on the market in 1955 as safe and effective.

Calls Them Inadequate

"The university's Dr. Wendell M. Stanley declared in testimony for the defense yesterday that in the light of subsequent knowledge, the tests were *grossly* inadequate.

"Cutter has maintained its vaccine was cleared by the government¹ testing agency before it was placed on the market."

¹ Throughout the past, all medical discoveries, especially those of great importance in medical practice, were introduced by the physicians who, after thorough tests by the profession, would then use them in their practice. The great change

"Testifying in Alameda County Superior Court, Dr. Stanley disagreed with some of Dr. Salk's theories.

"Among them was Dr. Salk's assertion that polio viruses processed properly will lose strength at a steady, predictable rate. Dr. Stanley declared that the drop of *virulence* does *not* follow a straight line, but a curve.

"The *only* laboratory that adheres to the straight line theory is Dr. Salk's,' Dr. Stanley said. 'All others in the world follow the curved line'."

"He said the problem with the curve is it does *not* always go down. The serum does *not* always lose its *virulence*.

"It is possible to have material which would not prove infectious after 14 days but would PROVE DANGEROUS at the end of, say, three or four weeks.

"The damage suits were filed on behalf of Ann Gottsdanker, 7, of Santa Barbara, Calif., and James Phipps, 4, of Morovia, Calif., who contracted polio after receiving injections of Cutter vaccines."—*Emphasis ours.*

Up to the present those who dared to differ as to the effectiveness or danger of the Salk and Asiatic flu serums or viruses were called every thinkable defamatory name, but now the "worm has turned" and it is men of experience and prominence, who begin to question their value, or the danger of their use. It is to be wondered at that the people are becoming more and more inimical to their employment in medical practice?

from dependence on the experience of physicians, to Governmental and Pharmaceutical approval, has aroused a great part of the medical profession to an awakening of the fact that they are no longer the authority in their field, as they should be, but are being dictated to by minority groups, and as will be indicated later, they are beginning to vigorously resent this.

The Restriction of Reputable American Physicians to Second Class Professionals

This restriction and domination of the profession is being sensed by more and more of the members, and some of them are breaking the bonds of silence and becoming outspoken. In a brochure written by James L. Doenges, M.D., of Anderson, Indiana, under the title: WHERE WE STAND IN MEDICINE, Dr. Doenges has this to say:

"If the medical profession can be controlled by the government (or any other group) then all others will succumb. If the profession cannot be controlled [refuses to be commanded what it is or is not to do in practice] it will remain an island of freedom which will cause the REGrowth of the love of Freedom in every other group. The intimate, personal and confidential nature of the patient-physician relationship must be destroyed before collectivism can achieve its goal.

"Just where are we, the medical profession, along the road to Collectivism, away from freedom, today?

"Each group has had its share of 'Judas Coats.' Each group has succumbed to pressure from those who accomplished their purpose by generating 'public demand' for government interference {*perhaps ignorance or unconscious of the fact that the denial to any one group is the beginning, the opening wedge to the control of all other groups.*} Each group has attempted to satisfy the forces of evil [selling their own freedom], and in so doing has surrendered its principles. The Medical profession provides a perfect example.

"One would think that the simple ability to observe the fate of the profession in other countries would prevent the acceptance of socialistic practices here. Unfortunately the 'ability to observe' [learn from the experience of

others] is not always accompanied by understanding of the desire to learn, or even the willingness to continue observing.

"Today, the plight of the medical profession in the United States, in relation to socialistic practices, is much worse than many realize or will admit. Superficially, the profession seems to enjoy a large amount or moderate degree of freedom. That which appears on the surface is underlaid by an extremely hard and brutal foundation of control and coercion.

"Actually, the medical profession is, to an unbelievable and alarming degree, operating under various socialistic practices and influences. Most of these are unrecognized, or at least not admitted, by the majority of the people as well as by the members of the profession."—*Emphasis and interpolations ours.*

The doubt and suspicion relative to the various virus and serums in the treatment of disease is increasing daily. It is no longer the nit-wits, crack-pots, fanatics, and Yellow journals, who are questioning their value, but physicians of experience and reputation, and journals of unquestionable responsibility.

To make matters worse for the makers and users of Vaccine Serums, is the result of a case tried in a California Court, instituted by the parents of children who were inoculated with the Cutter Polio Vaccine. We quote from a local paper, THE EVENING NEWS, Harrisburg, Penna., June 18, 1958.

Two Child Victims of Polio Win Verdicts of \$147,300

"Oakland, Calif., (AP)—A jury which said it had no choice under the judge's instructions awarded \$147,300 for two children crippled by polio after they received injections of allegedly faulty Salk vaccine in 1955.

"The judgment was against Cutter Laboratories, producer of the vaccine.

"It may set a precedent in settling 31 more suits against Cutter and many others against four other drug firms.

"Cutter president, Dr. Robert K. Cutter, said he will appeal.² The jurors said they did not believe Cutter was negligent in preparation of its vaccine, but under the judge's interpretation of the law it must find for the children.

"The PLAINTIFF'S attorney, Melvin Belli, hailed the decision as 'The first which makes a manufacturer stand behind his product in the good old American manner'.³

² Even if there is an appeal and the case finally won by the Cutter people, the damage is done. The news of the trial and verdict has been published in newspapers throughout America, the laity has read it, the majority believe that the Vaccine caused the disease, fear of virus and serums has been thoroughly instilled. Moreover, the immense sum for damage awarded will be an incentive for many actions perhaps even against physicians who are in no sense guilty. That is the reverse side of all such incidents.

³ The Law may compel a manufacturer to "stand behind his product," yet every experienced physician is fully aware, that it is an utter impossibility to guarantee the outcome of any form of medication. Even in medication properly prescribed in given cases, the *reaction* is frequently different than expected. This is equally true in prescribing foods for certain conditions. A food which is indicated in a case, and partaken of today with excellent results, will frequently a day or two later, react in an entirely different manner, and no experienced dietitian would undertake to guarantee the *reaction* of any food prescribed. When prescribing medication, the problem is even more delicate, and if a manufacturer is compelled to "guarantee" any medicine, however simple, he will frequently default, and it will be only a matter of time before the physician will be held responsible

"Lloyds of London, which insured Cutter for five million dollars that we know of, was the real defendant in this case," Belli said.

"The eight women and four men—by an 11-1 vote—awarded the parents of Anne Elizabeth Gottsdanker, 8, now of Providence, R. I., \$135,500 and the parents of James Randall, 4, of Monrovia, Calif., \$15,800. They had sued jointly for \$365,000.

"Anne Elizabeth, daughter of a former professor of psychiatry at Santa Barbara (Calif.) College, was said to have lost the use of one leg and partial use of the other, and to have developed a curved spine. James, whose father is an engineer, was less seriously hurt.

"The jury issued a statement with its decision which said the majority felt that Cutter Laboratories was not negligent 'either directly or by inference.'

"The statement continued 'With regard to the law of warranty, we feel that we have no alternative but to conclude that Cutter marketed vaccine which caused the plaintiffs to come down with poliomyelitis'."

"Superior Judge Thomas J. Ledwich was explicit in his instructions.

"After the verdict he said:

"It boiled down to this—did the children get polio from the vaccine or didn't they? You can call it a directed verdict'."

for his medication. The finding in the Polio Serum cases may set a precedent, and may be justified in numerous instances, but it is a dangerous precedent in that it may end in involving innocent physicians and dietitians, who are doing their best to help suffering humanity. The only safety to physicians, and dietitians, would lie in legally isolating the use of Vaccines and Serums from all other forms of medication.

Considering the results of this trial, what would be the outcome if, as was attempted in the State of Pennsylvania in the 1957 legislature, to make such inoculations compulsory? Who would be held responsible for untoward results? The manufacturers of the Vaccine or Serum? The physician using them? The Legislative body?

CHAPTER ONE

Section Two

*Physicians' Panel Hits Mass Need of Flu Shots
The Los Angeles Times, February 9, 1957, reported
as follows: "Panel Hits Mass Need of Flu
Shots — Vaccine Clamor Laid to
Hysteria by Medical Men*

"San Francisco, Sept. 28 (AP)—A panel of medical experts has reached the conclusion that mass immunization against Asian influenza does not make sense.¹

"The group met last night at the request of the San Francisco Medical Society to assess the status of the Asian-type virus.

"Among those on the panel were Dr. Karl F. Meyer, emeritus director of University of California's Hooper Foundation and one of the world's foremost experts on epidemic diseases; Dr. Lowell Rantz, Stanford professor of medicine; Dr. Henry Brainerd, University of California professor of medicine; Dr. Henry Bruun, UC assistant professor of medicine, and Dr. Ellis Sox, San Francisco health director.

¹ It is to be noted that this statement was *not* made by those generally dubbed as "crackpots," "charlatans," "religious radicals," but by recognized physicians of experience and unquestionable professional standing. We repeat again that our concern is not so much with the serum or vaccine used with the idea of combatting the flu, but the purpose for which it *might* be used, as indicated by *Fitche and Russell*: The deterioration of men's minds, ending in morons or insanity.

Hysteria Blamed

"Dr. Rantz said: 'If we were to give the vaccine to 1,000,000 persons across the board right now, we would have more deaths and illnesses from the vaccine than we have with the flu'."²

"Dr. Donald M. Campbell, president of the Medical Society, commenting on the clamor for vaccine, said: 'I'd say there is a good deal of hysteria or near-hysteria . . . I'm giving the vaccine only to relieve the near-hysteria'."³

"What induced this near-hysteria? Dr. Meyer suggested it arose from a deliberate campaign to sell the vaccine."³

² It is extremely doubtful if one of the laity would care to make such a statement. It is certain that no one having in mind the return to sane medical practice would want to do so. It is equally certain, that the millions who do not believe in serum or vaccine therapy, are fortified in their beliefs when they read such statements made by physicians themselves; especially when appearing more and more frequently in the press. Moreover, it should give pause to *those who are agitating for compulsory inoculation laws for polio, or other diseases.*

³ These statements have appeared in many newspapers, millions have read them, and their faith in vaccines and serums have been shattered. We repeat: It is certain that no responsible person other than reputable physicians would dare risk libel suits to make them.

CHAPTER TWO

Was There a Plan for a Siberian Type of Prison Camp of Vast Dimensions in Alaska? Human and Inhuman Mental Health Laws. Diabolical Experiments in the Prisons and Prison Camps Under German and Russian Jurisdiction

Many of the better informed Americans know of the vicious and almost unbelievable brutalities practiced on prisoners in Germany, Russia and all countries under their control, and are sensitive to the abuse of human beings never accorded to animals. Many of these were at once thrown into consternation, when they read in their newspapers and magazines about a proposed "mental health colony" to be established in Alaska, by authority of the American Government.

Those who had read remarks made by *Ana Pauker* to *Ileana*, Princess of Romania, in her *I LIVE AGAIN* and *MEDICINE UNDER DICTATORSHIP* by Dr. Leo Alexander and other writers were convinced that this was to be a duplication, apparently by the sanction of the American People, of the *Living Hells* existing in other countries. Had the Bill as first passed by the House become a Law, this would have been true. To quote from *I LIVE AGAIN*:

"She [Ana Pauker] was quite frank about the reason for their treatment of the people. She said that it was not possible, unfortunately, to destroy a whole generation and have only the young left to train. A certain amount of physical work had to be done—road work, agricultural work, industrial work—to support the children in their youth. It was for this reason that the older generation had to be left alive, but they must become too frightened to

dare to interfere with the Communist training of children.

"Moral and physical threats of every possible variety were used to produce this condition, and in doing so, *it was not necessary to have any regard for human life*. There would be enough of the 'expendable' generation, too old to train, for the purposes of labor, *no matter how prodigiously or recklessly they were used and destroyed*.

"Finally we got around to the subject of prisons, and she told me of her own imprisonment, . . . 'And did you change?' I asked her.

"'No,' she said, 'but I have already told you that we were not seeking to change people in prison. They are too old to be convinced, their habits are too strong. . . .'

"'But why not kill outright those whom you intend to punish most severely?' I asked her.

"Again there was the feeling of utter, ruthless, impersonal *inhumanity*. 'Simple death would be too good and too easy,' she said. '*And it would not frighten the others sufficiently*'."

Stephanie Williams, writing in *Task Force*, January, 1957, said, among other things anent the Russian-German¹ type of humanity:

"Our sons, husbands and dear ones who once were sent around the world to fight vicious enemies are now

¹ Practically all writers use the phrase "German or Germans." This is wholly unjust and unfair. Most of the German people, especially the Soldiers, did what they were commanded to do, and what our soldiers have always done, and probably always will do; *they obeyed the commands of their officers*. The officers, the directors, those in control, whatever their official position, were wholly to blame, just as are those in authority, and in charge of American "Snake Pits."

being subjected to untold [almost indescribable] tortures by this same enemy under the guise of medicine men."²

American Mercury for December, 1956: "Veterans in Snake Pit." "Subversive"³ agents are now experimenting with the minds of the American legally. Columnists and commentaries give full details on one of the most vicious red agents who had full access to the minds of our present people and nothing was done about it.⁴

"These sadistic experiments were first perfected in Russia under Stalin and later in Germany under Hitler. Dr. Lee Alexander describes what can happen to *Medicine in Dictatorship*. All state institutions were required to report on patients who had been ill five years or more and who were unable to work, by filling out questionnaires, giving name, marital state, nationality, who bore financial responsibilities. . . . The decision regarding which patients should be killed was made entirely on the basis of this

² This statement is by far too all inclusive. It should be changed to "a certain class of medical men, most of whom are of foreign extraction, still converted to foreign ideologies, and Americans so completely brain-washed that there is no longer any humanism in their hearts." Please refer to the statement made by Dr. David B. Allman, President of the American Medical Association. *Chapter one*.

³ It is becoming a general belief that in certain professions practicing in America, with American people at their mercy, a large percentage were actually members of our former enemies.

⁴ Those in "the know," many of whom are directly affected, do not hesitate to claim that of the many "psychiatrists" of foreign extraction now in practice, some holding high positions, probably no two out of eight could actually pass an examination such as American graduates must pass in order to obtain their license to practice. These facts are gradually becoming public knowledge. *What will be the result when this is actually proven, and the American people awaken from their lethargy?*

information by expert consultants, most of whom were professors of psychiatry in the key universities. These consultants themselves never saw the patient.⁵ The thoroughness of their scrutiny can be appraised by the work of one expert who between November 4 and December 1, 1940, evaluated 2,109 questionnaires." (Refer to New England Journal of Medicine, July 14, 1949.)

*Report of Testimony in Senate Hearing on Original Alaska
Mental Health Act Bill, According to Article
which Appeared in Williams' Intelligence
Summary, March, 1956*

THE HISTORY OF A DANGEROUS BILL

"Four days before the Territories Sub-Committee of The Senate Interior and Insular Affairs Committee started hearings on the Alaska Mental Health Act (HR 6376) I received a telegram from the chief counsel of the Committee, telling me that I might appear at the hearings if I so desired and I went. I feel that a full report of the hearings will be of value to all interested persons.

"I had not asked to be heard and do not know why I was given the opportunity to appear unless it was on request of a certain Senator whom I had wired about the bill —or perhaps it was because subscribers to the *Intelligence Summary* had mailed many thousands of copies of the editorial I had reprinted from the *Santa Ana Register*, showing the dangers of the bill.

"On arriving at the Committee hearings in the Senate Office Building at 2 o'clock Monday afternoon, February 20, I found the room packed mostly with friends, and Orange County's excellent Congressman, James Utt,

⁵ Refer to "Veterans in Snake Pits," *American Mercury*, December 1956, quoted in present volume.

was there and spoke for needed legal safeguards. Five or six other protesting citizens from California, including the Finn twins, and two from the East Coast also were heard.

"I had not been able to get hold of a copy of the actual bill, HR 6376, which had passed the House of Representatives on January 18, until arriving at the Committee hearing. Before that I had seen only the excerpts of it entered into the Congressional Record of January 18. I found that some legislation was badly needed."

Rep. Utt for Safeguards

"Congressman Utt gave me a typed copy of the schedule and told me that my time would likely come on Tuesday afternoon, which it did. By that time California patriots had carefully pointed out most of the defects of the bill and Senators Malone and Goldwater had shown a great deal of interest in their testimony. During the periods when they were present they did most of the questioning and it is my belief that these two capable and conservative Senators will insist on a good bill, as will Congressman Utt when the Joint Committee returns the bill to the House for re-consideration.

"Some of the testimony I read, some I *ad libbed*. I reproduce most of it herewith, partly from the manuscript, partly from memory:

"Mr. Chairman and members of the Committee:

"I am grateful for the opportunity to appear here in connection with the Alaska Mental Health Bill. First let me point out that there seems to have been a misconception here among some of the members who apparently were told by someone that I had called our beloved Alaska an American Siberia. I had done no such thing. I had stated that if this Bill HR 6376 was *not* properly amended

to provide safeguards, *it would create an American Siberia in Alaska.*

"As I understood it from information which your chief counsel kindly furnished me, under the present law which dates from 1905, all mental patients in Alaska are the responsibility of the Secretary of the Interior, Washington, D. C. Obviously this is an undesirable arrangement and I am wholeheartedly for a suitable change in that law which would enable the government of Alaska to assume full responsibility for Alaskan mental patients.

"But the Bill HR 6376, the principal bill under consideration here, contains some dangerous clauses and omissions. First it assumes that the government has the right and duty to take over responsibility for anyone believed or shown to be mentally ill, and to administer treatment to the patient.

"This is contrary to the American tradition which makes the individual responsible for himself, and the family responsible for its own disabled or otherwise unfortunate members. The state had only police powers over the individual. It may take him into custody only if he is a threat to himself or others. The state must not relieve the family of its responsibility and compete with and destroy local charity.

Welfare Workers to be Entrusted with Authority to Make Arrests

"Section 103 (b) page 9, says that any individual believed to be mentally ill may be admitted for care and treatment. . . . As stated above, an individual, sane or insane, is not the concern of the government unless he can be definitely shown to be dangerous.

"If the government is going to assume responsibility for all the sick people, however well they may be cared

for by their own private physicians, and however safe and well behaved they may be, where is the stopping place? The government can then go further and assume responsibility for and eternally provide for anyone. . . .

"The Bill HR 6376 does not provide for trial by jury in a duly constituted court of justice, and while the House of Representatives amended the bill to make such a jury trial available on request, I would like to see this Committee not only accept that amendment as provided by the House of Representatives but go further and where the patient does not request a jury trial, at least require that a judge, in whatever court may have jurisdiction, personally see the patient in court in a formal session and subpoena witnesses and otherwise satisfy himself beyond any reasonable doubt that the patient is not being railroaded, that the rights of the proposed patient are not being abrogated, or that the proposed patient is dangerous.

"The bill as drawn amazingly bypasses the Constitutional guarantees for the protection of an individual. It provides that the individual may be examined by a U.S. commissioner without the patient being present (Section 108 (f); and the Commissioner need not notify the patient in advance of trial (Section 108 (b). This is fantastic.

"I did not find anything in the bill which guaranteed the patient the right to have the advice and testimony of his physician at all times.⁶ I urge the Committee to make clear the right, including the right of the patient to have his own physician on any and all examining boards.⁶

⁶ As will be shown in other chapters of the present text, the people of many states are becoming sensitive to the shortcomings of National Mental Health Laws, insofar as protection to the mentally ill is concerned, and are making efforts to pass their own Bills.

"The bill provides blanket authorization for health or welfare workers to assume the authority and the duties of the local police in taking prospective patients into custody (Section 103 (b), Section 104 (b)). Under this bill a health or welfare worker may enter a home which heretofore American citizens have considered their castle, seize an individual on mere hearsay evidence (Section 104 (b))—and this could include malicious gossip or conniving to put away an enemy—and otherwise assume the powers of the local police. This is certainly a departure from recognized procedure of local government.

"If only those persons are considered to be a responsibility of the state who constitutes a threat to themselves or to others, then obviously such persons are police cases and no health and welfare worker should be permitted to assume the responsibility for arresting such persons. To do so, sooner or later, some health or welfare worker will have to go armed, may have to break into a home, perhaps beat down the door, and go in with drawn pistols and seize the proposed patient—sane or insane—and without a warrant for his arrest.

("The chairman presiding over the hearings, Senator Bible of Nevada, interrupted to ask where I found any such authorization. I cited the above sections, and the Senator made notes indicating that he intended to take the matter under consideration.)

"Under these provisions a person might readily get a political opponent committed and shipped to Alaska and held there indefinitely in an insane asylum.

"In case such a supposition may seem far fetched, I would like to point out that many of the leading advocates of new mental health laws and procedures which, like this bill, almost completely ignore the legal safeguards of the individual, include among 'mental patients' who should be

committed, their political enemies—persons whom they call 'super-patriots,' nationalists, isolationists, persons who oppose world government, persons who oppose UNESCO, persons who, they contend, have 'group prejudices,' and so on.

"One of the pacemakers for the mental health movement which is throwing many new and dangerous mental health bills into the hoppers of state legislatures each year, Dr. Harry A. Overstreet, in his book *THE GREAT ENTERPRISE*, published in New York, 1952, included in his classifications of insane and mentally ill, persons who have 'constellations of prejudice areas.' Dr. Overstreet added, 'A man, for example, may be angry against race equality, public housing, the TVA, financial and technical aid to backward countries, organized labor and the preaching of social rather than salvation religion'."

It is highly important to repeat here the statement reportedly made by Rabbi Leon Spitz in a sermon March 1, 1946, and which appeared in the *American Hebrew*:

"Let Esau whine and wait and protest to the civilized world, and let Jacob raise his hand to fight the good fight. The Anti-Semite⁷ . . . understands but one language, and he must be dealt with on his own level. The Purin Jews⁸

⁷ An anti-Semite is supposedly one who speaks against the Jew, orthodox or Communist, whether or not what he says is true. The procedure followed by the Gentile, the true American, has always been forthright in his condemnation of anyone, American or any other nationality, guilty of wrong, (especially so, if his fellow American is a gangster, a dope-peddler, a white slaver, an extortionist, or whatever he may be) in the strongest words to be found in the Bible or dictionary. Only thus can wrong be righted.

⁸ This is an ambiguous term; our jails are now overfilled. It would require asylums such as proposed for Alaska, or such

stood up for their lives. American Jews too must come to grips with contemporary anti-Semites. *We must fill our jails⁹ with anti-Semitic gangsters.* We must combat every alien Jew-baiter. We must harass and prosecute our Jew-Baiters to the extreme limits of the Laws. We must humble and shame our anti-Semitic hoodlums to such an extent that none will wish or dare to become fellow-travelers.”¹⁰

There is but one method of safety. In all such Bills to be enacted there should be a clearly worded phrase making it mandatory that:

No one, whatever his nationality, color or creed, shall be declared mentally ill, unbalanced or insane because of any “peculiar” religious, or political belief he may hold, or because he is “Anti” anything, whether this be anti-religious; anti-mystic; anti-Catholic; anti-Jewish, or anti toward any individual group, class, or nationality; nor

as are already in operation, described as a Snake-pit, to retain all who might be accused.

⁹ When we use the designation “Jew” or “Negro” throughout this book, we do so with the same respect as when we use the term “Gentile,” but, *who* are the Jews? *Where* are the Jews? *What* are the Jews? In the quotation, two kinds of Jews are mentioned; “Purin” Jews and “American” Jews. In Israel, as an example, it is a criminal offense for a Jew to marry other than a Jew, and this is in accord with the Biblical command: “Everything after its own kind.” In America there are unnumbered Jews who are the activating personnel of organizations actively engaged in attempting to bring about *desegregation* and encourage, by word and print, intermarriage, so severely punished in Israel. Who, which, where are the Jews?

¹⁰ Accepting Dr. Overstreet’s definition of the mentally ill, would not Rabbi Spitz, and the others like him (magazines are filled with such demands), who use such language, and make such threats against all who do not agree with them, *come under the same category?*

because he freely expresses himself on such subjects, damaging or defaming any person or group. If so charged, the proper course to follow shall be by libel suit in the courts of his county or state.

"Dr. Overstreet said that all of these persons are, 'we now recognize, well along the road toward mental illness.'

"Obviously, these persons are political opponents, and Washington would have been eligible for commitment under this act if he were living today, and I fancy there would be a multitude more."

When the public became aware of the dangerous provisions of the Bill which the House had passed, the fears and alarm became so great that there was an avalanche of protests to the Senators comparable to that when Roosevelt tried to change the Supreme Court, or when Truman tried to interfere in steel. A substitute bill was prepared and later passed. In the August, 1956 edition of Williams Intelligence Summary, the editor, who so valiantly had fought the original bill, reported:

"A gust of good news flows in from Washington this week: You and your fellow patriots have scored a complete victory in the fight to clean up the Alaska Mental Health Bill.

"Recently the Senate passed, and on July 20 the House accepted, a version of HR 6376 which contained not a single one of the dangerous commitment procedures of the original bill. We got even more than we asked for: the bill left all commitment procedures up to the people of Alaska and their legislature.

"That is where the authority for commitment procedures should lie. It is not the business of the Federal government to tell the people of a state or territory how they must handle their police and insane cases. All laws enacted by legislatures must stay within the bounds pre-

scribed by the Federal Constitution; beyond that, the state and the people reserve all authority for governing themselves.

"Many people have misunderstood this modified bill. You will doubtless remember that the original bill HR 6376 ripped the Constitution to shreds. It ignored the right of jury trial for anyone accused of being insane or needing treatment for 'mental health.' It authorized Alaska to provide hospitalization at public expense for anyone believed to need treatment for something called 'mental health.'

Original Bill Dangerous

"Such government paternalism is the underlying principle of state medicine. If the government assumes responsibility for the mental patients [other than persons proved to be dangerous] it will be but a short step to assuming responsibility for physical patients too—everybody with a bad sinus or appendix or heart or kidney; everybody with a sore thumb or stomach ache. There is positively no difference in the principle, and if we get in the habit of turning over to the government responsibility for mental patients, then we will have surrendered to the principle that the government owns us and is responsible for our health and welfare and we will have complete socialization of medicine in no time—and God help us.

"The original bill would have authorized a policeman or even a welfare worker—even a welfare worker for a private hospital—to go into a home and seize a citizen, without a search warrant, on mere hearsay evidence, and commit the victim to a hospital for the insane. You do not believe the bill did that, do you? Not unless you read it yourself. For it is incredible. But it did, and I still have a copy of the bill and the House of Repre-

sentatives was so sound asleep that it passed that bill by voice vote, with only one noteworthy amendment—a provision reaffirming the right of trial by jury if the patient requested such trial.

"The right of trial by jury already was a constitutional right of any victim, but in view of the widespread degeneracy of our courts, it now must be written into every law, for fear the victim will be denied the right.

"Under the House version, any welfare worker for a public or private hospital could seize anybody in Alaska and throw him into an insane asylum. This means that the welfare worker would assume the powers of local police. They would of course be resisted and would then have to use a gun and perhaps break down a door to get in, and we would have Federal police, and without any code of conduct or restrictions. And the enemies of God and men would have had a field day, sending their agents into hospitals as welfare workers (so many of whom already are either 'bleeding hearts' and stooges or outright revolutionists) and they would have begun seizing the anti Communist leaders, whom they call Fascists and whom they have publicly called 'mentally ill.'

"Super-Patriots" Protest

"There was also a provision in the original bill which many of us, including some good lawyers, felt might be interpreted by some left wing 'liberal' judges [of whom there now are so many] as authorizing the Governor of a state to ship any citizen of that state off to the proposed Alaska insane asylum merely by arrangement with the Governor of Alaska.

"The left wingers who got up this bill and their friends who introduced the bill into the House and pushed it through, contended that this clause could not so author-

ize a Governor; but all we asked, regarding this clause, was that law makers spell out in a single brief sentence a prohibition against such action, making the meaning clear. This some of them resisted, calling the tens of thousands of people who opposed the dangerous bill, crackpots and super-patriots.

"The bill proposed to grant Alaska a million acres of land to finance the hospital. Alaska has hardly any source of revenue; the Federal government owns about 98 per cent of the land there; and this grant was merely to provide a source of revenue for the proposed hospital. This was one of the few provisions in the bill with which there was nothing wrong; it would be good for the Federal government, as it soon would be homesteaded or bought, leased for timber or oil or mining or other uses, and Alaska soon would be developed.

"But this clause at first was misunderstood; it looked as if the deal was to build a huge 'mental health' hospital on a million acres of land, and, knowing how the Communist dictatorship of Russia uses hospitals and barbed wire containments for disposing of political enemies, and since it is the Communists and [enemies of God and Man] backers who originate the dangerous 'mental health' bills in the various states in recent years—any patriot was justified in looking with fear and suspicion on this huge land grant in connection with the booby-trap hospitalization bill.

"An alert young woman named Burkland in the vicinity of Los Angeles, together with some of her fellow 'super patriots,' as the persons who got hold of a copy of the bill were called, began sounding the alarm. She called it a bill for 'Siberia, USA.' My excellent home town daily, the *Santa Ana Register*, took up the fight with a powerful editorial using her title, 'Now—SIBERIA, USA.' I re-

printed 18,000 copies of the editorial and sent them out to subscribers and patriotic organizations, many of whom in turn got out warnings of their own; and in two or three weeks we had sent an avalanche of letters and telegrams to Washington. Fulton Lewis, in his newspaper column, described the flood of protests as one of the biggest in many years.

"The Senate sub-committee holding the hearings on the bill became acutely conscious of every paragraph, line and word in it. That was what we wanted. We wanted the Senators and Congressmen who make our laws to wake up and see that a lot of bills are written for them by enemies of constitutional government and by fools, and that these laws, especially those on the subject of 'mental health' are packed with dangerous provisions. We wanted the lawmakers to become suspicious of *all such bills*, particularly those originating in the infiltrated bureaus.

"We wanted the lawmakers to read and study the bills, from the point of view of the freedom-loving citizen, before voting on them.

Senator Malone Re-wrote HR 6376

"The Senate sub-committee of the Committee on Interior and Insular Affairs invited Mrs. Burkeland, this editor and four or five other 'super patriots' to testify.

"Senator Malone wrote a new version of the bill, eliminating the commitment procedures, leaving them up to Alaska. He went even further: he wrote into the bill three guarantees of constitutional rights. These were:

- "1. A provision prohibiting the transfer of a resident of one of the 48 states to a mental institution in Alaska.
- "2. A provision that all patients and proposed patients should be treated humanely; and

"3. A provision restating the patient's right to the writ of habeas corpus.

"But [according to reports] the committee members decided that even these 'commitment procedures' should not be written by the Federal Government; that, instead, the entire bill of procedures was properly a matter for the people of Alaska and their legislature to decide—and the Goldwater bill was substituted.

"In any case, the Alaska legislature would not have the authority to reach into a state and take a citizen of that state; and the Constitution of the United States guarantees the right of habeas corpus—*though that right certainly ought to be spelled out in any bill for commitment procedures.*

"The acute awareness of the importance of local self-government, as against Federal interference, is perhaps the most revealing evidence of the completeness of the victory of the alarmed citizens who poured protests into Washington. It is extremely gratifying to some of us who have tried for so many years to make the law makers see our point of view, that we want to preserve local self-government and resent the growing disregard of our individual freedom by an increasingly overbearing Federal power machine.

"Senator Langer offered, and the Senate accepted, an amendment 'which carefully spelled out a prohibition against taking any of these (Naval oil reserve) lands or any other known mineral deposits' in the million-acre land grant, I am informed by our Congressman, James Ott.

"The House accepted the Senate stripped-down version of the bill, though its backers in the House, notably Representative O'Brien of New York, wailed that the superpatriots had ruined a good bill."

CHAPTER TWO

Section One

Mental Health Legislation, Marxist Concepts. The Difficult and Complicated Problem of Present-Day Mental Health Laws

Due to various causes, some readily controllable by just and enforceable Laws, mental ill-health is increasing and *will continue to increase until all Toxic agents in food and water potent to shatter the nervous system and weaken the mind, are eliminated by means of strict legislation.*

Laws dealing with this subject should have in view several objectives:

1. The humane treatment of all who are mentally ill.
2. The strict prohibition under heavy penalties of any and all experimentation or abuse of the mentally ill.
3. The supervision of all mentally ill by the selection of a physician *and* psychiatrist, who, in conjunction, diagnose all cases before treatment and/or confinement is ordered.
4. The welfare of the mentally ill must be the first consideration.

The problem confronting those sincerely interested in the welfare of the unfortunate victims of mental illnesses from any causes, is complicated by the undeniable fact—admitted by the group itself—of a vicious minority fast becoming a majority. These men call themselves psychiatrists, who, *judged by what they advocate*, appear to be wholly without morality, humane feelings, human sympathy, and ethics as understood by the

average normal human beings. Their only thought is based on self interest, or the satisfaction of the diseases of morbidity or sadism; the unholy pleasure of seeing their fellow beings suffer.

On the other hand is a group of men who are *physicians at heart*; whose deepest interest is to relieve the suffering of the ill. These men who are proficient, experienced, and ethical in their procedure, have the welfare of humanity at heart. This group is no match for the vicious, self-selected groups who are making every effort, succeeding in many instances, to control this phase of the care of the ill.

To obtain an understanding, BASED ENTIRELY ON THE SELF-CONFESSED METHODS TO BE PURSUED IN THE CARE OF THE MENTALLY ILL, it is essential to be informed of the basic concepts of such care(?) as is taught by what may be considered as the "fathers" of this special class of psychiatrists.

Where did this type of psychiatrists gain their knowledge in preparation for the treatment, or care of the mentally ill? According to published reports which have never been denied, but actually confirmed by English and American leaders in this field of human care, it was in Russian schools under Beria, and according to the Marxist concepts for the deterioration of men's mind by Toxic agents such as *Sodium Fluoride* in food and drink.

We quote this concept which today governs the actions of perhaps the greater number of those in charge of the mentally ill; many of whom are Americans by birth, but who have been thoroughly brainwashed:

"With the institutions for the insane, you have in your country prisons which can hold a million persons, and can hold them without civil rights or any hope of freedom. AND UPON THESE PEOPLE CAN BE PRACTICED

SHOCK AND SURGERY SO THAT NEVER AGAIN WILL THEY DRAW A SANE BREATH.¹

"Reportedly, and never contradicted, this was the welcome of Commisar Lavrenti Beria, former head of the Soviet secret police, to a group of AMERICAN STUDENTS AT THE LENIN UNIVERSITY IN MOSCOW.² Commissar Beria continued:

"You must dominate as respected men, the field of psychiatry and psychology.³ You must dominate the hospitals and universities.⁴ You must carry forward the myth that only a *European* doctor⁵ is competent in the field of

¹ Numerous of the diabolical methods that have been, and continue to be practiced, even by some American physicians, have been dealt with in other sections of the present text. Because of these vicious inhuman ideas which govern the actions of many physicians, especially psychiatrists, every effort *must* be made that protective measures readily enforceable be incorporated in *all mental health laws* to be enacted in the future.

² Are we in error when we state that the Russian Marxist school of psychiatrists is the parent of the vicious phase of the American treatment for the mentally ill, governing the *thought* and *actions* of these psychiatrists?

³ It is undeniable that men who have been brainwashed into this concept, are the vociferous and aggressive proponents for Mental Health bills that would place the care of the insane into their hands and, what is more to the point, have any person declared insane *who dared to oppose them in any manner*. This, they have openly declared *should be done*, maintaining as they do, that the *nonconformist* is by that very fact, mentally ill.

⁴ Let those interested in this subject, and *every man and woman should be, investigate and learn for themselves whether or not this is true.*

⁵ Almost every third question of those—and there are now many—who seek information on this subject, ask whether it is true that only brainwashed American and European doctors are aggressive in not only teaching these foreign ideas, but also are

insanity, and thus excuse amongst you the *high* incidence of foreign birth and training. . . .

"Use the courts, use the judges, use the Constitution of the country,⁶ use the medical societies⁷ and its laws to further your ends, . . . And when you have succeeded, you will, and you can . . . make the *capitalist* himself, by his own appreciations, finance a large portion of the quiet conquest of the nation."⁸

"Psychopolitics⁹ is the art and science of asserting, and

making every effort to eliminate from hospitals and institutions all American spirited physicians by replacing them. They are believed to continually and consistently agitate for legislation that would place not only the insane under their jurisdiction, but also control the sane by the threat that any opposition is liable to be the cause for them to be condemned, judged, and placed in confinement as mentally ill, and in need of strict supervision.

⁶ Has this been done? You, the reader, must answer this question yourself. Ask yourself: What has been done with our Constitution? You will have the answer.

⁷ In the text you will find the opinions of well-known medical men, members of Medical Societies, as to what has happened to many of them, and is gradually happening to others.

⁸ The textbook used in the University of Moscow was entitled: "The Communist Manual of Instruction for Psycho-political Warfare." This has been condensed into a pamphlet entitled *Brainwashing* by Kenneth Goff former member of the Communist party, who claims the original book is used as a text in America, notably in the Eugene Debs Labor School in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. *Brainwashing is a comprehensive and inclusive title as it strikes at the basis of all human advancement and achievement, as will be shown.* Though in a sense not interesting reading to the average American, *every* American should be fully informed of efforts made toward man's mental deterioration by means of *brainwashing*, as well as by Toxic additives in his food, and other even more diabolical measures.

⁹ This term appears to be a combination of Psychology,

maintaining, dominion¹⁰ over the thoughts and loyalties¹¹ of individuals, officials, bureaus and masses. . . .

" . . . the individual must be directed from without to accomplish his exercise, education¹² and work. . . .

"The tenet of rugged individualism,¹³ personal de-

and Politics. Actually it is a form of hypnotism by other than the usual method pursued by hypnotists, and can only be effective *when the individual or the mass are foolish enough to listen to the proponents.*

¹⁰ Dominion over the individual or the mass is possible only by the use of force, police or the army, or by debased psychological, or psychiatric control.

¹¹ America became great as a direct result of the teaching and practice of *loyalty* to law and order, the *loyalty that is honor*; loyalty to the state which is *love of country*; loyalty between persons that is *morality and humanism*; loyalty to the Laws of God which is *naturalism*. Destroy these, and man is no longer man, but a *creature without principle*, hence *self-destructive by permitting enslavement of himself*.

¹² This is exactly what *Fichte* foresaw, and was made generally known by *Russell* in his *The Impact of Science on Society*. This should receive careful study by all having an interest in their loved ones and themselves, not to mention *their country*, and to *avoid enslavement to other countries*.

¹³ From the beginning of the history of America under the dominion of the better class[not the deportee riff-raff or cut-throats dumped on our shores by the French and British] these were originally held as *virtues of the highest order, and it was as a result of the exemplification of these God-given and God-inspired virtues that America became great and the leaders of the world*. Destroy these, and America will become a vassal state of those who planned just this and among whom, unfortunately, are all too many of the descendants of great Americans.

All of these virtues that Americans possessed and exercised unconsciously, or subconsciously, before the time of Wilson and his conversion to English Socialism, *are inimical to all of the Marxists doctrines and alien ideologies, the cut-throat enemies*

termination, . . . Will, Imagination, and personal creativity . . . are antipathic¹³ to the good of the Great [Welfare] State. These wilful and unaligned¹⁴ forces are no more than illnesses.¹⁵

" . . . one must . . . create and continue a semi-privation¹⁶ in the masses in order to command and utterly control the nation.

"Communism could best succeed if at the side of every rich or influential man there could be placed a psychopolitical operator . . . who could then . . . upset the economical policies of the country and, when the time

of man would impose upon a people once free and proud, because of their achievement.

¹⁴ Unaligned, because *nonconforming*. A deadly sin in the opinion of the Marxist and the psychiatrists of foreign extraction, who are thoroughly brainwashed with the idea that not to conform to *their* idea is actually a form of Mental illness.

¹⁵ Reading much of the present-day English and American literature one is confronted by the charge that to disagree with a certain group (the unAmerican minded) of many of the leading Mental Health advocates, is a mental illness. According to their view, they *alone* are sane, and anyone whose opinion differs, whether on politics, race, religion or any other subject, especially if it concerns *race purity*, is unquestionably mentally ill and to be dealt with without mercy.

¹⁶ This was the doctrine of the inhuman butcher Ana Pauker, and is undeniably the practice in vogue in the "closed shop" of Unionism in many parts of America. As an illustration: nearly all candidates in late elections who supported the fundamental "right to work" platform were defeated. *Conform or starve*, is the edict.

Fichte foresaw this in his statement quoted by Russell in *The Impact of Science on Society*, and that serums, perhaps in themselves chemically pure, could, *in some manner, be adulterated with mind-destroying substances and made use of for this purpose,—hence the great fear of all serums in millions of minds.*

comes to do away forever with the rich or influential man —ADMINISTER THE DRUG OR TREATMENT¹⁸ to bring about his complete demise in an institution¹⁷ as a patient, or death by suicide. . . ."

". . . Any man who cannot be persuaded¹⁸ into communist rational is, of course, to be regarded as somewhat less than sane¹⁹, and it is, therefore, completely justified²⁰ to use the techniques of insanity upon the non-Communist.

". . . one of the first and foremost missions of the psychopolitician is to make an attack upon Communism and insanity synonymous. It should become the definition of insanity, of the paranoid (fear) variety, that 'a paranoid believes he is being attacked by Communists'."

Which indeed he is, under disguise and a most insidious manner.

"If we could effectively kill the national pride and patriotism of just one generation, we will have won the country.²¹

¹⁷ This very ideal, and method, was carried out in Poland under Ana Pauker and her cohorts, and is advocated in much of the literature by a certain class of those active in the Mental Health movement.

¹⁸ By instilling fear or downright brutal means.

¹⁹ The concept of the Marxists, and those Americans who have been converted to these foreign ideologies.

²⁰ The doctrine, old as primitive man, that "the end — no matter what end is in mind—justifies the means." *Be subservient or be condemned, is the modern concept of those who aim to control by any means necessary.*

²¹ Nothing truer, or more to the point, has ever been written in all the literature by the enemies of man under whatever banner they operate. So long as men are *really*—in thought and spirit—true—patriotic—to their country, *Nothing is powerful enough to pierce that armour.* The key to America's salvation

"The handling of youth²² cases by courts should be led . . . into 'mental problems' until the entire nation thinks of 'mental problems' instead of criminals.

"It must be carefully hidden²³ that the incidence of insanity has increased only since these 'scientific practices' have been supplied.²⁴ Great remarks must be made of the 'peace of modern living' and other myths as the cause of the increased neurosis²⁵ in the world. . . .

"You must work until 'religion' is synonymous with 'Insanity'.²⁶"

and future greatness, is patriotism, and its associate, *loyalty*; i.e., preserve *nationalism*, maintain these and America and her citizens will be safe.

²² This idea has now developed into a huge monster. Not only the youth is now in many instances considered in this category, but all manner of adult criminals, including murderers and rapists. So serious has this miscarriage of justice become that *The U. S. News and World Report* made an investigation and devoted considerable space to an exposition of radical change in legal procedure dealing with criminals.

²³ Every procedure of a degrading, deteriorating and mentally destructive nature must be hidden from the people as thoroughly as possible, irrespective of the nature of the methods or agents employed.

²⁴ These "Scientific methods" may be those of education; food and water adulterated with Toxic substances; drugs of a nature that are productive of neuroses because of their effect on the nervous system, hence the mind. Serums impregnated with Toxic substances known to be destructive to nerves, muscles and the mind.

²⁵ Neurosis is now even frequent where none of these diabolical methods are made use of as a result of denaturing basic foods of the vital mineral and vitamin contents so *absolutely essential* in maintaining physical and mental normalcy.

²⁶ No longer is it safe, *especially if you profess Christianity*, to defend your religious conviction. To do so, is proof in itself

Statements are made that certain members of the Mental Health Associations are governed by the Marxists convictions, both in Europe and America. Can these statements be verified by their own statements? We feel they can, and with ease.

In England there is a World Federation for Mental Health. In the November, 1957 issue of *TASK FORCE*, there appeared a reprint prepared by *Derek Tozer*, of an article entitled "ATTACKS THROUGH 'MENTAL HEALTH,'" by special permission, from *CANDOR*, a British News Letter, London, England, from which we quote in substance:

"The World Federation of Mental Health is Dr. Margaret Mead, a *Unesco* anthropologist cited by the U. S. Senate Committee as having consorted with the self-confessed N. K. V. D. agent Mark Zborowski. Its President-elect is Dr. Brook Chisholm, a Canadian who DENIES MORALITY . . . THE ADOPTION OF COLORED CHILDREN *in preference to having one's own*, and who thinks the ideals of Communism 'cannot be improved upon.' . . . The booklet *Mental Health and World Citizenship*,²⁷ which vividly portrays the character of the Federation, states: 'Principles of mental health cannot be successfully furthered in any society unless there is progressive acceptance

that you are no longer mentally balanced, and to permit you to be at large is a danger to your family, community, and possibly the State.

²⁷ This is an acknowledgment of what has been said before. It unconditionally connects Mental Health activities with World Citizenship. Not National, not American citizenship, but *betrayal of loyalty to the country*; in short, *becoming a traitor*, and accepting dominion in every department of one's life. To stand firmly for one's country, to refuse world citizenship, is *per se* proof of *nonconformity, hence a grave mental illness; a fit subject for a mental institution*.

of the concept of world citizenship.²⁸ World citizenship can be widely extended among all peoples through the application of the principles of mental health.²⁹

“Men to be Remodeled”

“From this it will be seen that anyone who objects to the benefits[?] conferred by the world citizenship is quite definitely³⁰ *non compos mentis*.³¹ As a preventive measure to make him ‘healthy’ the W. F. M. H., has embarked upon a campaign, in the first place to make him ‘mental-healthy’ conscious: which will probably succeed in implanting the idea that there is something wrong with him.”

“Subsequently, man is to be ‘remodeled,’ since ‘the social scientist is aware that human conduct is modi-

²⁸ This statement leaves no doubt that if there is not an immediate acceptance of the concepts of world citizenship, it must be gradually—successively—accepted, or *else!* Let there be no doubt, this must be in conjunction with denial of ones religious beliefs or concepts. *In short, a repudiation of both religion and country, or, a mental institution.*

²⁹ A slightly veiled threat to one and all to either accept world citizenship or be charged, tried, and convicted under Mental Health Enactments, and incarcerated, possibly for life.

³⁰ To have been a descendant of fine American stock, of a family who accomplished great things; helped build American institutions, and even the asylums they would use to cage him if he *does not conform*, means nothing except that all the while he was “not all there.” For him to “confess” his error, and agree to conform, *will at once cure him of his malady*, unless it so happens that he possesses something they want.

³¹ Anyone’s objection that he is satisfied with the way God created him; with the work he is doing; the religion he believes in, and loyalty to his country, is the absolute, uncontradictable proof that he is a subject for immediate confinement. The question is: What will true Americans do about it?

fiable.³² The only question remaining is 'just how to mobilize human Will so that the individual and group resistance to change can be overcome'."

"The idea that human nature [yours, my reader] can be changed [*not* by your desire, but by the Will of others] was touched upon by Lord Adrian, Vice-Chancellor-elect of Cambridge University, who in his presidential address to the British Association in 1954 declared that 'the discoveries of science have forced the human race to give up beliefs on which it has relied for centuries.' This relegation of Christianity to the limbo of all-but-forgotten myths³³ so tickled the palate of the W.F.M.H. that they reprinted it in their quarterly journal, *World Mental Health*. . . . They also reprinted from the *British Medical Journal* an article by the same distinguished scholar, in which he opined that 'PREVENTIVE HEALTH SERVICES ARE BOUND TO INTERFERE WITH INDIVIDUAL LIBERTY'³⁴ . . . and if they aim at mental as well as physical health

³² Regrettably, this is in greater part true. The inertia, and the idea "It can't happen here" and "what they do is really for our welfare" is so great, that little resistance is developed, and men follow betraying leaders as sheep a bell-wether.

³³ You millions uncounted who profess Christianity, and still have it in your hearts and find solace in it, how does it feel to have professed atheists who believe neither in God nor patriotism nor loyalty to country, tell you that upon which you base your faith, is nothing but a myth?

³⁴If the mental health concepts of the one worlders are to prevail, and they will if it is within their power to enslave you and the millions, then there is no more liberty for you. The freedom of man, like your cherished religion, will really be a myth. There will be nothing left for you but to obey, and the "health" and "peace" of mind dealt out to you will certainly be a myth.

they must be prepared to separate mothers from children³⁵ and to supervise³⁶ the lives of people who would like to be let alone.

"It is hoped that psychological operatives [will] become the advisers of political figures, *even to advising* [more correctly, dictating to] the entirety of a political party as to its actions in an election . . . a psychiatric advisor should be placed near at hand in every government operation.³⁷

Measures to be Pursued — The Enemy Has Doubts

"The means of counteracting the enemy on both fronts are clearly implied in the *Manual on Brainwashing*. 'Given any slightest encouragement,' it states that public support would swing in an instant all mental healing into

³⁵ Your life will be supervised from the cradle to the grave. Your ideas, your ideals, your normal desires, will all be destroyed by brainwashing and other means, and you will be made less than the animals in the field, for they are natural, while all that is yourself will be *unnatural* to your original nature.

³⁶ This is simply repeating what Russell portrays in his *The Impact of Science on Society*. It is the plan in the minds of the enemies of mankind that in a modified form, was tried by the Amazons but failed, and all that remains of them is a legend. If there is success in this plan, then mankind, as it is at its best today will, like the Amazons, be no more than a legend.

³⁷ This states the plan concisely; the one worlders, Marxists, taking over politics, and not only dictating to one and all what is to be done, but placing psychiatrists in control of those in office. Efforts of this nature are in the immediate present made along these suggested lines, and being partly successful, may awaken the people to their great danger. The true American minded psychiatrist, like the ethical American physician, has nothing to do with politics, his work is purely a humanitarian one of helping the people, not enslaving them.

the hands of the Churches.³⁸ And there are Churches waiting to receive it, clever churches. That terrible monster, the Roman Catholic Church, still dominates mental healing heavily throughout the Christian world and their well-schooled priests are always at work to turn the public their way. Among the Fundamentalists and Pentecostal groups healing campaigns are conducted which, because of their results, win many to the cult of Christianity.

What the Enemies of Mankind Must Overcome

"All {this} must be swept aside.³⁹ They must be ridiculed and defamed and every cure they advertise must be asserted a hoax . . . just as in Russia we had to destroy, after many, many years of the most arduous work, the Church, so we must destroy all faiths⁴⁰ in nations marked for conquest.

³⁸ Could their aims be more obvious? Nothing may be allowed to interfere with their infamous plans and procedures.

³⁹ The methods: These are all too well known to those who have even partially awakened to what is going on. Force and diabolical methods have thus far failed, but if they can destroy the confidence of the people by ridicule, by false accusations, by character assassinations, especially by charges of mental illness, and by arrests and imprisonments of nonconformists, they feel they can win.

⁴⁰ In Russia they destroyed churches. Here they are well aware that although wholly inhuman methods have been allowed without punishment, the moment the destruction of property is started, the people as a whole would arise against them *en masse*. How then to proceed: *By gradually undermining the faith of the people in their religion.* This, generally, is not as difficult as it would seem, because thousands, perhaps millions, are luke-warm in their respect for their church and ministers, and only a faint belief in God, Law, and Order holds their loyalty. This

Another and *most vicious* plan⁴¹ in the enemy's campaign is suggested in Chapter XV "Proposals which must be avoided" in the Brainwashing Manual, directs that:

"A country's law must carefully be made to avoid any rights of person to the insane.⁴² Any suggested laws or Constitutional Amendments which *oppose the harming of the insane should be fought to the extreme, on grounds that only violent measures can succeed.*⁴³

in many instances can be undermined by promises of *something which has the appearance of being more desirable.*

⁴¹ Actually what is being advocated in this proposal is already a part, stated in misleading terms, of many Mental Health Laws, and has been the cause of many controversies in the attempts to pass new bills, though the public generally has little knowledge of what is taking place.

⁴² We are supposed to be civilized, a cultured people, and yet there are men and women aplenty who not only endorse such legislation, but do all in their power to have it become law. Uncivilized people of most countries, the American Indian as an example, offered the greatest possible protection to those unfortunate enough to be mentally ill, restraining only the viciously insane. We call ourselves "civilized" and label these Indians as *uncivilized. Who, actually, is civilized?*

⁴³ We question if there is an experienced, reputable, ethical physician in America who would agree to the statement that only brutal, vicious methods are effective in the treatment of the insane. Restrictive measures, yes, but not brutal, violent measures. However, the intent of such legislation in the hands of these Godless, Soulless, inhuman creatures, is *not* intended to apply to the violently insane, but to the thousands "rail-roaded" into the asylums, and the many more that are to be incarcerated for any act, word, or deed not pleasing to the Marxists or one worlders, who have foresworn in their hearts all patriotism and loyalty to country, and would subject the highest civilization to the lowest. To them all men are pawns. The most cultured are even less desirable than the Hottentot, because more difficult to control.

"If the laws were to protect the insane, AS IT NORMALLY DOES NOT⁴⁴ the entire *psycho-political programme would probably collapse.*

"A third means of defense consists of keeping the psychiatrist in his place.⁴⁵ In the W.F.M.H. patheon, the psychoanalyst Sigmund Freud is the All Highest⁴⁶; yet the underlying tone of Freudian work is *mean, obsessed, often disgusting, obscene*, immoral and unmoral; its *whole purpose* being the destruction of all moral and Spiritual values."⁴⁷—*Emphasis ours.*

Sir David Kelly further stated, and we believe every experienced psychologist will agree with him:

"⁴⁴ In the attempted new legislation in various States, it has been revealed that in practically all laws formerly in effect, and to some degree written into the new legislation, this is actually a fact. The accusation has been made that in numerous instances women physicians are the staunchest supporters of vicious legislation. Fortunately, there is an awakening of this horrible, inhuman situation, and "it is reported that an attempt is currently being made by Dr. Johnson, Conservative M.P. for Carlisle, (England) to safeguard against arbitrary arrest of persons who are 'accused' of insanity."—*Task Force.*

⁴⁵ It is the opinion of many, we among them, that if two-thirds of all psychiatrists, many of them of foreign extraction, were to be deported, the odium upon medical practitioners who *appear* to be mostly to blame, would be removed, and the "mentally ill" of psychiatric opinion, could breathe more easily.

⁴⁶ A physician friend expressed the idea that if ever a man was obsessed by abnormal sex ideas it was Sigmund Freud. In his morbid mind, all things began and ended in sex, and it did not matter whether the idea or practice was normal or abnormal, as long as it was sex.

⁴⁷ This is *not* a conclusion expressed by us, but by an authority: Sir David Kelly in his book *The Hungry Sheep*.

"I suggest that . . . psychology⁴⁸ has far outgrown the pioneer Freudian stage, but is still divided into various schools, that it is far from having become an agreed positive science. I mean a science of such a kind that anyone who has studied it can assume the right of pontifical judgment in particular cases as it is being attributed to by laymen."

⁴⁸ True psychologists may have been guilty of minor errors, but very few have set themselves up as arbiters of fate; arbiters of final judgment, and decreed inhuman treatment for their fellow creatures.

CHAPTER TWO

Section Two

Arizona, Like Indiana, in the Throes of a New Mental Health Law

An aroused people, becoming informed of the vicious concepts taught by Beria and other Marxists, and that these principles are the basis of the American Health Code, fought for the enactment of just legislation. Legislators of the various States are beginning to feel the pressure of mass opinion, and are torn between the demands of psychiatrists thoroughly brainwashed by vicious ideologists and American born, American educated and Humanitarian imbued psychiatrists.

"Members of the three committees of the Arizona House spent almost two hours [trying] to explain a new mental health code and adjourned without taking action, pending further study.

"Various provisions of the bill were explained yesterday by Edward Jacobson, counsel for the Arizona Medical Association . . . [and others, among them] Dr. Samuel Wick, superintendent of the Arizona State Hospital for the mentally ill.

Two Words of Mental Code Stir Uncertainty

"State legislators trying to patch up an antiquated Mental Health code¹ have given some indication that un-

¹ Mental Health Laws may be both vicious and dangerous, and jeopardize the liberty of every American citizen. There should be no "patching up" permitted by the legislators. Any bill passed into law should be clearly worded, having in mind two things: *justice* to the mentally ill, and *protection* against any possible *injustice* to the American citizen.

certainty² over two small words in the bill may cause more concern than the real issue.

"The new code [considered], as well as the old, provides that 'any person' may file in superior court a petition alleging that any other person is mentally ill and in need of supervision care, or treatment. This sets the wheels in motion for an examination."³

"Doctors and others who explained the bill at a hearing of three committees of the Arizona house encountered numerous questions about the 'any person.' Could it be a person himself mentally ill,⁴ someone with an ax to grind or someone who wants to harass another because of malicious intent?

"The answer is, proponents say⁵ that there is plenty of remedy in civil as well as criminal proceedings, in

² Any bill that does not contain clearly defined provisions, should immediately be scrapped, bearing in mind that the freedom of millions of American citizens is at stake. Moreover, it should be made certain that no part of the Lenin or Marxist concepts already quoted, form any part of a new code, or method of procedure. Neither should any foreign ideology be permitted to enter into consideration in the preparation of such a Law.

³ It indicates an effort in the right direction, providing that among the examiners there be the family physician who has had no part in the filing of petition, or a physician of such person's choice.

⁴ Provisions in all such bills should be specific that the person making a petition be himself of good reputation and standing in the community; one who has not been accused of any double dealing, dishonesty, moral decay, or any form of misdemeanor.

⁵ Those interested should question these proponents to secure information relative to civil, as well as criminal proceedings, and in statutes now existing, if protective measures are

statutes existing⁵ so the inquiring lawmakers need have no worries on that score. But persistency of their questions indicates trouble ahead if and when the bill reaches the debate state.

"Actually, the new code represents a conception—new to Arizona's legal climate—that it is possible to be mentally ill without being dangerous to life and property. It provides for voluntary admission⁶ without judicial hearings—either open or closed—and it sets forth safeguards against 'burying' the mentally ill or supposedly mentally ill in an institution.

"The new code provides for public judicial hearings *only* when the patient requests⁷ it, or his lawyer asks for it.

"In some cases, under terms of the New Code, the Judge may commit without a hearing, upon certification

indicated. They may exist somewhere and in some states, but we have been unable to find them. The reader is referred to *Chapter Two, Section Seven* and *Chapter Four* of the present volume.

⁶This may be called a "left handed" mode of procedure. Are the mentally ill capable of deciding what they should do, and how to do it? Hardly. Who then is their protector? Certainly not the petitioner. Is it not possible that the one who feels he or she is mentally ill, suffering perhaps from "nervous prostration," with no illness of the mind, request voluntary admission, when as a matter of medical knowledge he should be in a sanitarium and not an asylum. Who is his protector, or where is his protection if he is "admitted" without judicial hearing? How many might be "buried" alive under such a legal provision?

⁷Here is the crux of the matter. What mental case is competent to judge whether or not he should have such a hearing? Does not even the patient suffering with nervous prostration go to his physician to learn what he should do, knowing himself incapable of choosing for himself? How then can even the slightly mentally ill make such a choice, and having no lawyer to represent him, who will act as his protector?

of two physicians, but the patient is protected by a 72-hour limitation.⁸

In a sheet called the "Bell Ringer" and it is truly just that, is a beautiful sugar coated catch that should satisfy anyone and everyone, also a damning admission that might readily apply to any new Mental Health Bill as it did [does] to the old:

"The new MENTAL HEALTH ACT—House Bill #55, is No. 1 on the State Association legislative agenda. At present it is in several committees of the House. . . . It provides that a mentally ill person may be admitted to a hospital without going through the humiliating experience⁹ of an open court trial and possible days of incarceration¹⁰ in a country jail.—OUR PRESENT SITUATION—UNBELIEVABLE—but true.¹¹ Among other important

⁸ Being committed, not by his own request, but by certification of two physicians, who will take over at the expiration of the 72 hours? Who is to select the physicians who will sign the commitment papers? American physicians as a whole are the world's best, but there are many to whom a dollar looks like the shining sun. Doubt it? Read the records of a certain class of physicians openly selling, or writing prescriptions, for tranquilizer pills.

⁹ Do we not all, when seriously ill, pass through the torture of the physician's waiting room and the long, tedious examination? Who will do this for us? If we with keen minds are able and willing to do this, where is the terribleness of doing so on the part of the mentally ill, even if not seriously so?

¹⁰ What an admission? So it is possible, even under the new bill, that if a person accused of being mentally ill, does not present himself without trial, *he may be incarcerated—for how long?* If he presents himself voluntarily, he cannot be very mentally ill, and if judged so, what then?

¹¹ Who is foolish enough to make an admission that up to the present *the situation* for the unfortunate human derelicts or *those judged so*, the situation was—is—terrible. *What an indictment!*

modifications, it removes from our text the term "insanity"¹² substituting 'mental illness'."¹³—*Emphasis ours.*

ment, and judgment of the humaneness of people of the great state of Arizona?

¹² What an enormous, all-powerful relief it must be for the mentally ill, or those judged so, to know that they are *not* insane, just *mentally ill*.

CHAPTER TWO

Section Three

Sideline on Mental Health and Psychiatry a Danger Signal — An Example

The constantly increasing danger to the average American who will not readily conform to a stereotyped pattern, and who dares to criticize those in official positions even though the criticism is just, is illustrated by an occurrence which took place in Germany. This condition was made the subject of a broadcast by Fulton Lewis, and published in many newspapers, specifically THE DAILY OKLAHOMAN, February 6, 1958, under the heading of:

"Criticism Brings Nightmare Ordeal"

Similar instances have occurred in various parts of the United States. We have by-passed them because we felt that they were sporadic outbursts, and not instances setting an example, as a warning to every American citizen, who dares to have an opinion of his own.

"The ordeal of Fletcher Bartholomew, meteorologist for the Free Europe balloon propaganda operation out of Munich, suggests that the psychiatric profession perform a searching re-examination of its practices before it falls into disrepute.¹

¹ Such an awakening appears to have taken place in various states of the country, notably in California as indicated by the discontinuation of the Kaiser Clinic (*Chapter Two, Section Five*) and the Bill by Senator Dilworth (*Chapter Two, Section Seven*) in the California Legislature.

"Bartholomew, a brilliant young man who was an air force test pilot with rank of captain during World War II, and an honor graduate from MIT, served 23 months in the Munich job, and was preparing to bring his wife and three children home to Minneapolis.

"Shortly before departure, he made out a report in which he made certain criticisms of the Free Europe operation in general and expressed suspicion that some of its upper-echelon employees were homosexuals.²

"For his trouble, says the *official U. S. Army file*, Bartholomew was lured³ to the Army General Hospital in Munich, where Capt. Alfred Kamm subjected him to an examination and committed him to a barred-window room in the mental ward, with a 24-hour guard.

"He was drugged by mouth and hypodermic for five days, then strapped—ankles, wrist and forehead—to a stretcher and flown home as a litter case.⁴ His wife, who was not even informed of his departure from Munich, followed him home by commercial airline, demanded his

² It is rather strange that such an expression of opinion should have been the cause of what followed, considering the fact that a book published in the United States has had and still has, wide circulation in which such charges against high officials have been repeatedly made and documented.

³ It should be noted that Fulton Lewis used the word "lured." The charge has been made in various publications that perhaps several hundred thousands of persons have been so "lured" into asylums on charges that they were *mentally ill*, not generally so diagnosed, except by the Psycho-political trained psychiatrists.

⁴ Perhaps the most horrifying aspect of the entire debauchment is the fact that any person, without proven justification; without the diagnosis of a physician that drugging is necessary; may be drugged, and treated as the most violent insane, and with no possible means to escape until by one means or another,

release by the hospital at Fort Dix, N. J., and he was immediately freed.

That the entire affair was one of the grossest of injustices is clearly indicated by the fact that Bartholomew was "immediately freed" without even the formality of a trial; furthermore, that there is not even a hint that any attempt was made to punish the guilty as a warning to be certain of their facts before acting. *Who will be the next victim?* This is the question of those who are following these cases with an ever-increasing horror.

The fact that the army was totally without authority to hospitalize a civilian, even if he had requested it, which is the exact opposite of the facts, is a side issue. The really shocking facets of the case are these:

"Capt. Kamm, who did the committing was not a psychiatrist nor even a medical doctor. He is a member of the army medical service corps and the Pentagon has him listed as 'social worker.'⁵

"The decision to commit Bartholomew, says the army, was made by a board of three doctors in Munich, none of whom had ever seen him. One psychiatrist, Lt.

he is released. Could anything possibly be more inhuman or diabolical? Would any human minded, sane person treat his fellow man in such a manner? If such things can take place, and *they do, then where is safety for anyone?*

⁵ Referring again to the reported discontinuing of the Kaiser Clinic in Oakland, California, where psychiatrists and *social workers* "were let out," the opinion is gaining that many social workers are a greater danger to man's freedom in America than even many psychiatrists. Such an opinion, becoming widespread, would be the source of great harm because honest, sincere, competent social workers, like *competent, humane psychiatrists*, are almost as essential for the care of the ill, as are physicians.

Col. Ralph W. Clements, finally examined him the third day he was incarcerated.

"The information on which the decision was made was information provided by the very person⁶ whom Bartholomew had criticized. No effort to check the information was ever made and there was no effort to obtain additional information.

"Bartholomew's wife and friends were never interviewed, nor were their protests or denials of the 'evidence' heeded. Indeed, several of the psychiatrists⁷ have informed me that Mrs. Bartholomew's refusal to 'co-operate' in the incarceration of her husband was evident that "the woman herself was mentally ill."

"I assured them that if I were in Bartholomew's shoes, and they attempted to get Mrs. Lewis to 'co-operate,' they would get some reactions from her that they could never find in any book.

"Col. Clemments, now in private practice, was much

⁶ Accepting published, uncontradicted reports, this has happened on numerous occasions in Free America. Men were either fined or imprisoned, or both, for expressing their opinion on religion. This is an ever-present danger that should be incorporated in every Mental Health bill passed by the States or Congress. According to reports quoted, Judges in the State of Indiana have refused to enforce such provisions.

⁷ *Conform!* Conform or be If you don't, *that is proof you are mentally ill.* In the opinion of a certain class of psychiatrists, *every one but themselves is mentally ill, unless they agree with everything these psychiatrists hold to be true.* A very old Pennsylvania German saying comes to mind:

"Martha, me thinks every one but ourselves is queer,
and I think thou also art a little queer too."

In their opinion only these self-constituted guardians of the people are actually sane. Are we to accept this as Fact? Are the sane actually insane?

impressed by the fact that Bartholomew was reported to have a gun. As this finally bloated into the ultimate army medical records, he was 'carrying a gun.'

"Actually, the gun was kept on a closet shelf, was duly registered with American as well as German authorities, was not loaded and was purchased because the Bartholomew home had been broken into and ransacked one weekend while they were away. I called these facts to the attention of Col. Clemments and his reply was, 'Well, I was not familiar with all of the details.'⁸

"This seems an extraordinary attitude, when 'details' are as important as these, and a blot on a man's mental record is at stake.

"Psychiatry is the infant of the medical arts, and if this is a sample of accepted practices—which the members of the profession to whom I have talked assure me is the case⁹—it is fast developing a juvenile delinquent and a dangerous one.

⁸ The question foremost in any sane person's mind is: Would any competent, ethical American physician diagnose a case before he had a full history of the case? If not, and I feel certain that he would not, then what right, what authority, should any one less than a physician, be recognized as possessing? It is a question that *must* be answered sooner or later, and it is likely that the real physicians in America must provide the answer.

⁹ As more and more instances of what appear to be the miscarriage of justice appear in the public press, especially in towns and small cities, the opinion is gaining, that for the safety and justice to the mass, the authority to judge who is, or is not insane, must be returned to the medical profession.

There is no implication in this that there are not as many honest, sincere, capable and ethical psychiatrists *pro rata* as there are physicians, but it is equally certain that perhaps the majority are of the nature and type endorsed by Lenin and his followers.

"Superimpose the pattern on a medical case and you might have the doctor's receptionist committing a patient to the pest house for smallpox on the strength of unsubstantiated stories from his estranged wife."

CHAPTER TWO

Section Four

Mental Health Legislation – An Awakening

Mental Health Legislation within the past few years has been proceeding at a galloping rate. Much of this legislation is based on the Marxist ideas as annunciated by Lenin and his followers. If analyzed, basing the conclusions on THE PROPO-NENTS OWN STATEMENTS, it classifies as insane or on the border line, the actually sane, self-supporting, personally responsible, individualistic personalities who made this country what it is, its people supporting most of the world's drones and decadents. THE REASON: THEY ARE MEN and WILL NOT CONFORM, while the really borderline and actually insane, though perhaps not consciously so, set themselves up to judge, condemn, confine the perfectly sane, frequently confiscating the property of the really normal.

So all inclusive has become the condemnatory powers of this group, which is thoroughly imbued with foreign ideologies, that it has aroused the public to this peril, while judges on the bench recognize the great danger and in some instances no longer consider themselves bound to carry out the edicts of such legislation.

Indiana is such a state. Apparently the first state where, as a result of the action of associated Judges, it sets at variance its Laws dealing with this terribly dangerous procedure.

Under the heading of:

Judges to Ignore New Mental Health Case Laws

Refer to *Individual Rights Violated*. A work by Bernard W. Wynn.

The Indiana Star, January 7, 1958, has this to say:

"Marion County judges, meeting in general term, voted unanimously yesterday to ignore a new state law which allows the court to confine a person in a mental institution up to six months without notice.¹

"Judge Norman E. Brennan, presiding jurist of the six-man panel of judges, termed the law 'dangerous' because it 'violates an individual's civil rights.'²

"Circuit Judge John L. Niblack fired a critical letter to State Mental Health Commissioner Stewart T. Ginsburg, pointing out the law's 'obvious defect.'³

¹ Such an enactment is not a Law in the real sense of the term, as it sets at naught every one of man's constitutional rights. By decree, without trial, without testimony, without a shred of opportunity at self defense, a man may be shanghaied, imprisoned, made to suffer the tortures of the damned, and, since he is not present to protect his property, this may be confiscated, and, at the end of six months, it may be found, generally is, that he is as sane as any man born of woman. Such laws strike at the very foundation of all liberties, all freedom of action, all individual thought and decision. No slavery was ever made more certain. *No man can again consider himself a free man, safe from apprehension unless such enactments are repealed.* The slightest effort, or achievement, which arouses the envy, or cupidity, in those less fortunate, may be causative of his incarceration. A man's *only* safety is to do nothing; and, thinking, not to betray his thoughts by word or writing.

² Not only does it denude the citizen of his civil rights but *every right he possesses*, because whatever he may do, whatever he may say, whatever he may possess, may arouse the envy of others, with the result that the first assault on his freedom and possessions will be made, and, possessing no right of defense for at least six months, is more certainly a slave than any man who ever lived.

³ This was a rather dangerous thing for even a judge to do because in the opinion of the Marxists, a man who holds such an adverse opinion to their fundamental concepts of what consti-

"Under the 1957 act, Judge Niblack said, a person could be seized by the sheriff and thrown into a mental institution without a court hearing.⁴

"The law only requires that a 'reputable citizen'⁵ sign a complaint accompanied by a physician's affidavit stating that the person *is believed*⁶ to be of unsound mind.

"No notice is given to the accused but the court merely hears testimony from the citizen and the physician and approves the 'temporary commitment'⁶ for a period not exceeding 90 days.

tutes sanity, prejudges him as mentally unsound, and this judgment may be based on his refusal to conform.

⁴ This provision is incorporated in the Mental Health Laws of many states. The mass of voters know little about it, and are not at all aware that any one of them constantly stands on the very threshold of such action. On this basis all that man has labored for, sacrificed for, possesses is only his by the grace of those who can have him seized at any moment.

⁵ Who is a reputable citizen? In actual practice, almost anyone with a personal reason can act as a "reputable citizen." As a matter of fact, very few men in any given area who have made a success in life, who have reared a family, and who have built up a reputation for honesty, morality and personal responsibility, would take such steps to imprison a fellow citizen as a last resort, and under extreme provocation, while few American physicians would sign such an affidavit without a thorough examination and investigation. However, unfortunately for humanity, there are always exceptions.

⁶ If a man can be committed up to six months without interference by an aroused citizenry and on the accusation of a man who has not himself been tried for honesty and disinterestedness, lack of prejudice, *who* then is there to make an effort for his release? If he is to be automatically released if no one proceeds against him, *then it is self-evident that he was innocent and sane to begin with*. Many a man lacking generally good health would become unbalanced under such heinous circumstances.

"The superintendent of the institution may then keep the victim [correctly named] in the institution for another 90 days by making a request for extension to the judge.

"Under this procedure, the judges declared, it would be possible for a man to 'frame' his wife into an institution, or a wife to 'get rid' of her husband.⁷

"The Constitution grants everyone the right to be notified of charges made against him, [so we have been taught] and [be permitted] to face his accusers in open court, they [these still free self-thinking judges decreed] pointed out.

"This temporary commitment procedure applies to those mentally ill, alcoholics, narcotics, feeble minded, or epileptics,⁸ Judge Niblack said.

⁷ If such Mental Health enactments are declared constitutional, then divorces in general may readily become a thing of the past. Divorces are frequently long drawn out, they are expensive, and they are very hard on the reputation of one or both parties, but under the Mental Health enactments, all that is necessary is to accuse the other, the charge of mental cruelty will do very well. Husband or wife goes to prison, the accuser is left in possession of the business or estate, and since there is no provision in law, does what he or she wishes with it. If the victim is ever released, who will dare to offer sanction to him or her, without risking the same kind of treatment?

⁸ How many reputable, experienced American born physicians will agree that alcoholics generally are actually insane or mentally ill? Some of the most prominent artisans and professional men, *including* physicians, are alcoholics. They are not vicious, and in most instances will seek seclusion while on a "spree." No sooner are they over their debauchery, than they return to a useful life. These men in general are *pathological* cases, but *not* mentally ill.

The feeble minded are not insane, nor are they mentally ill.

"The temporary section is one of three new or revised sections added to the mental health code last year—by the Indiana General Assembly.⁹

"The first section allows a person to surrender voluntarily for treatment and the third section provides for emergency commitment where the person is violent or threatens injury.¹⁰

"I believe until further notice I am not going to bother about temporary commitments,' Judge Niblack wrote. 'Under regular commitment procedures, now followed by the superior and circuit courts, a citizen signs the affidavit and a physician attests to it.

"Then a notice is delivered personally to the accused and he appears in court with his attorney.

"After hearing the testimony, the court appoints two 'disinterested' psychiatrists to conduct an examination and submit a report of their findings.

They are in need of efficient, careful, humane treatment, not incarceration in an asylum.

Who is the physician who does not have epileptic males as his patients, and who does not know of others similarly afflicted, who are fathers of healthy children and who themselves are respected, responsible, and creative citizens.

⁹ That it was possible to add these additional sections assures the certainty that the people of Indiana had not the slightest idea of the trap that was being prepared for them, hence there was no opposition to the passage into law of such sections.

¹⁰ If a person shows by his action that he is mentally unbalanced and becomes vicious or violent, then there is cause for the physician to have him apprehended, so that he cannot harm another, and receive the proper treatment while undergoing tests for his sanity. Laws for the protection of the individual, and the mass, are proper and should be enforced.

"The judge then rules whether the person should be committed for treatment or custodial care.¹¹

"Judge Niblack said the temporary section is not needed and should be repealed next year."

Who, many ask, is in danger of being the next victim of such new enactments Judge Niblack refuses to enforce?

The answer is simple: Unless you hear nothing, and see nothing, *and above all*, SAY NOTHING AND POSSESS NOTHING, YOU are in constant danger. Neither your life, nor your freedom, is your own until either such laws are repealed, or all judges on the bench are of the Judge Niblack type. May there soon be a multitude of such!

¹¹ This is a proper procedure with one proviso: That the psychiatrists are not foreign trained Marxists who are boldly on record as believing that the non-conformist who does not agree that the Marxist ideas alone are correct, is mentally unbalanced.

CHAPTER TWO

Section Five

*The Vicious Mental Health Law of California, The Short-Doyle Act, of 1957.**

"NOT MAYBE, or—it-can't-happen-here! It HAS happened, and it IS already law!

"Do *you* know what it is, and how it may affect you and your family, right now? If you don't, this may be your last chance to learn, and ACT in time to help save our America and our American way of life. . . . Take time, NOW, to learn and TAKE ACTION before you go to bed, tonight!

"THE SHORT-DOYLE Act was made a part of the California law in 1957. It provides, in part, for as little as two members of The Calif. Conference of Local Mental Health Directors (constituting a quorum) to approve standards, rules and regulations for the entire State!

"THE MENTAL HEALTH LAW now in effect threatens your freedom, and you can be:

- "1. Arrested without a warrant!
- "2. Transferred to any State in the Union!
- "3. Confined and treated in a County or State Hospital without a Court order!

"WHY? BECAUSE IT MAY be to someone's advantage, personally, politically, or financially—to dispose of another person. This *could* be you!

"UNDER THE POWER given just TWO members of your local Mental Health Board if you are considered in

* A Digest of this Law by Betty Lee Morales, Los Angeles.

need of . . . supervision, treatment, care or restraint, any peace officer or health officer may ARREST YOU WITHOUT A WARRANT! With no right to protect yourself by means of a hearing, and competent medical representation, you may then be taken from your home, placed in a County or State hospital where you can be detained and treated, or transferred to ANY mental hospital in the U. S., including Alaska!

"AND . . . IF THE SUPERINTENDENT or person in charge of a psychopathic hospital *feels* that . . . in his judgment you are a suitable person for emergency care or treatment, he may hold you and treat you for 72 hours, without a Court order!"

CHAPTER TWO

Section Six

Present Legislation on Mental Health Criticised by an Experienced Physician

An American's view on Mental Health Legislation was published in *The Los Angeles Times*, March 27, 1958, as reported by Norman H. Goodhue, *Staff Writer*.

"Readily admitting that there is a mental health problem,¹ psychiatrist and psychologist, Dr. Lewis A. Alesen, past president of the California and Los Angeles County Medical Associations, and former chief of staff at General Hospital, declared some present mental health laws and practices to be '*dangerous to America*.'

"He addressed the national convention of Pro-Americans yesterday at the Ambassador.

"He pointed out that proponents 'fuss and bother'² raised over the mental health problem is out of proportion to the significance involved since, BY THEIR OWN

¹ This is admitted by practically, if not all, experienced physicians in America, as well as by all sincere humanitarians who are unbiased and working for the welfare of mankind. They, like Dr. Alesen, criticize the methods pursued by many psychiatrists.

² If that were all who were involved, it would not be so serious a matter, but the verified facts are that many proponents are "turning heaven and earth" to prove that *any one who dares voice any opinion, on any subject not in harmony with their own, is by that very fact, mentally ill and must be confined. Not only is this their contention, but many people are actually confined for no other reason.*

ESTIMATE, FEWER than 6% of the population are involved in the extreme.

"Placing of Sane in Institutions Flayed"

"Dr. Alesen warned against the danger of commitment of perfectly sane persons to mental institutions. Those persons, *under the new laws, have no recourse although the laws abridge or violate the Constitution and 6th Amendment.*³

"It can happen in the United States, because it has," the speaker said, and cited cases to document his statements.

"He used the published words of G. B. Chisholm, C.B.E., M.D., major general in the Canadian army, active in the World Health organization and in international psychiatric groups, to show that the aim is to 'change materially and permanently human behavior'.⁴

"He quoted from a prepared statement of the 1948 International Congress on Mental Health setting forth that '*social institutions such as family and school impose their imprint early in the personality development of its members, who in turn tend to perpetuate the traditional pattern to which they have been molded.*'⁵

³ Less than forty years ago it is doubtful if there was a single American who did not possess the utmost confidence that the Constitution was his bulwark of protection for his life and liberty. Today that Constitution under which free men made America the greatest nation on earth, is flouted, sneered at, and sidestepped in practically all the affairs of men. And few possess the assurance that *they are actually free men.*

⁴ This subject has been fully treated in another chapter of the present volume.

⁵ Considered at length in another chapter. Refer to Fichte's statement in the first chapter of this book: *What education (the present so-called "progressive" education) is to accomplish.*

"It is the men and women in whom these patterns of attitude and behavior have been incorporated who present the immediate resistance to social, economic and political changes.

Dr. Alesen documented also his statement that the National Association for Mental Health distributes a booklet containing the statement:

*"Principles of mental health cannot be successfully furthered in any society unless there is progressive acceptance of the concept of world citizenship."*⁶

"After pointing out that all Americans except 'some of the controlling psychiatrists and psychologists' would be mental robots under the new mental health program made possible under [many present laws], Dr. Alesen⁷ proposed solutions to meet the problem.

"He gave figures to indicate that private hospitals are operated at lower costs than are public hospitals.

"County Mental Health Clinics Considered"

"He believes that all health care to indigent and

⁶ And there, gentle reader, you have it. *Away with Americanism; destroy Nationalism; Down with our glorious flag, after all it is only* an old "rag." You and I are no better than the Mongolian and the Hottentot; in fact, not nearly as good. They are free people; *First class citizens* of their domain. We who once called ourselves Americans are now under Civil Rights, only *second class citizens*.

Moreover, it is our duty—in fact—we have no choice—to work and slave to support most of the world's drones and decadents. Do we advocate resistance? *We decidedly do not.* If you tried it you would be "mentally ill" and perhaps find yourself in a nice little cell, with gentle attendants. We inculcate *Education; make the truth known;* select and elect only men for office who are imbued with the old-fashioned American ideals.

⁷ It was Dr. Alesen who made this statement, *not we.*

chronic sufferers for which governmental agencies are in any manner responsible should be given by contract between the governmental agency and a private hospital. . . .

"Instead, he pointed out, under the 1957 Short-Doyle Act, Los Angeles County Board of Supervisors is considering the establishment of mental health clinics,⁸ with subsidy, in the county.

"He described how present facilities could be leased to private organizations for operation, how loans from private bankers could help finance expansion, how voluntary plans for prepaid medicine could be revised to include psychiatric care.

"Under a long range program, Dr. Alesen would make an immediate start to reaffirm that FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF INDIVIDUAL RESPONSIBILITY, SELF-RELIANCE, INDIVIDUAL RESPECT OF ONE'S FELLOWS, AS WELL AS FOR ONE'S SELF, AND TO GET DOWN TO THE BEDROCK ON WHICH 'OUR REPUBLIC WAS FOUNDED,' BUT FROM WHICH IT HAS SO WIDELY DEPARTED."⁹—*Emphasis ours.*

The Opinion of an Unbrainwashed Physician

THE ARIZONA REPUBLIC, April 8, 1958, under the title:

⁸ Refer to the Oakland, California Clinic experience.

⁹ Almost from the first days of the beginning of this country until a few years ago, the prowess of the "he" man was extolled in song and poetry, but within the past few years, since we have become a Marx-ized people *afraid to go it alone*, the reverse has been true, and everything possible is done to glorify the weakling, the conformist, the "yes" man. We cannot conceive that the men, who are by nature still *men*, will long continue to live under such a disgrace, and feel certain that by some means men will again so live as to bear proudly the time honored title of *Men*.

"Doctors' Role in Mental Cases Outlined"

"The role of the family doctor in the treatment of psychiatric cases was outlined at a meeting of the Maricopa County Medical Society last night at Arizona State Hospital.

"Speakers were Dr. Samuel Wick, hospital superintendent; Dr. D. M. Bramwell, assistant superintendent; and Dr. Richard E. H. Duisberg and Dr. Otto L. Bendheim, Phoenix, psychiatrists.

"According to Dr. Bramwell, treatment of mental illness with the new psychopharmacologic drugs has greatly increased the discharge rate of mental hospitals. It is at this point, he said, that the family doctor¹⁰ enters the picture since the patient must continue to take his medicine, probably for the rest of his life.

"He offered the hospital's cooperation to family doctors in continuing treatment of the patient after he is discharged. He added that taking the medicine regularly and in proper dosage is extremely important.¹¹

¹⁰ Many physicians, as a result of experience, are coming to the conclusion that *all* treatment should be under the care of a medical physician; that the psychiatrist's part should be no more than to help find the *cause* of a mental illness, but have no part in prescribing the treatment.

¹¹ Physicians are realizing more and more that they have been led on a wild goose chase. In most instances the mental condition is really the result of an illness—a lack—in the physical man *with its reflection in the mind*. As more and more foods are denatured so that the system cannot obtain the material—the vitamins and minerals it requires to maintain physical vigor and balance; the nourishment of nerves and muscles is deficient. Failure to avoid as the devil is said to avoid "holy water," the Toxic processed foods which have the power "to materially and permanently change human behavior (mentally)" is also a factor in undermining the physical.

Many experienced physicians are beginning to realize the menace of a certain type of Mental Health advocates and psychiatrists of Marxist persuasion. According to newspaper reports, Dr. Harman Harvey, professor in the University of Southern California who still sees clearly and reasons logically, is not in favor of frightening the people with the bugaboos of such terms as "frustration," "maladjustments," and similar words to cover mental inertia, innate laziness and irresponsibility which the old fashioned hickory whip would have cured had it been applied in their youth.

According to the report, he refers to these psychotic alarmists as "emotional blackmailers," a rather kindly term for those who constantly frighten the public to near or downright hysteria. He states with clear-sighted reasoning that the adjustment cultists would have the mass trembling at the possibility of ever experiencing frustration and anxieties. As an example, a parent who is plagued by his little daughter's insistent questions and because of misconceptions, dare not respond with a surly¹ "go away," for fear of doing irreparable damage to his daughter's fragile psyche,² these giving her a "rejection" complex. This he maintains is palpable nonsense.

"FRUSTRATIONS AND ANXIETIES ARE PART AND PARCEL OF THE HUMAN PACKAGE. IF WE ARE FOOLISHLY OR BY INANE INSTRUCTIONS ISOLATED FROM THEM IN OUR YOUTH, WE WILL HAVE AN EXCELLENT CHANCE OF A NERVOUS

¹ It is not desirable that the parent or teacher abruptly brush aside the questions seriously asked. Instead, if time and knowledge permits they should be wisely answered. If the time is not suitable, then the questioner should be kindly informed why, and when answers will be given.

² The average psychiatrist and psychologist knows just about as much of the "psyche," *the Soul*, as a cat does of raising chickens.

BREAKDOWN WHEN WE ARE FACED WITH SOMETHING HIGHLY UNDESIRABLE IN THE REAL WORLD OF OUR MATURITY. *Without frustrations and anxieties, we lose creativity and become formless gelatin.*"—*Interpolations and emphasis ours.*

This is the most sane and sensible exposition of the subject we have yet heard or read.

Controlled frustrations in childhood and the experience of failure (vide Lincoln) are not to be feared as enemies of the mind but welcomed as does the prize fighter the daily sparring match to strengthen him to win the fight he will engage in.

CHAPTER TWO

Section Seven

A Truly American Mental Health Bill

It is reported from California that Senator S. Dilworth, has submitted a Bill before the California legislature dealing with Mental Health, an almost exact duplicate of the User L. Burdick Resolution for an Amendment to the U. S. Constitution, and tied up in the Judicial Committee of both the Senate and House, where its fate is about as uncertain as that of many other Bills that have the WELFARE OF THE PEOPLE IN VIEW. Compared with all other Bills that will be pigeon-holed or passed, *this is the most important.*

SENATE CONSTITUTIONAL AMENDMENT

Introduced by Senator Dilworth, May 24, 1957

Referred to Committee on Judiciary

"Senate Constitutional Amendment No. 46 — A resolution to propose to the people of the State of California an amendment to the Constitution of the State, by adding to Article I thereof a new section to be numbered 26, relating to the "Bill of Rights for Mental Freedom."

"Resolved by the Senate, the Assembly concurring,
That the Legislature of the State of California at its 1957 Regular Session commencing on the seventh day of January, 1957, two-thirds of the members elected to each of the two houses of the Legislature voting therefor, hereby proposes to the people of the State of California that the Constitution of the State be amended by adding Section 26 to Article I thereof, to read:

"SEC. 26. This section shall be known and may be cited as the 'Bill of Rights for Mental Freedom.'

"(a) No person shall be committed to or confined in a mental institution without a court hearing.

"(b) No person shall be committed to or confined in a mental institution unless he is afforded the right to a speedy public trial; to a trial by jury; to counsel of his own choosing, or if unable to obtain counsel, to a counsel appointed by the court; to be confronted by his accusers; to ample notice of the exact charges against him; and to compulsory process for the attendance of witnesses.

"(c) It shall be the duty of the public defender, if appointed, to defend persons accused of being mentally ill or mentally deficient, and it shall be the duty of the court to appoint counsel for any such person, if that person is unable to obtain counsel of his own choosing.

"(d) No person shall be committed to or confined in a mental institution because of his religious or political beliefs.

"(e) No person shall be committed to or confined in a mental institution to prevent him from exercising his right of freedom of speech, including his right to express his political views and to criticize the government, any public official or any law.

"(f) No person shall be committed to or confined in a mental institution to prevent him from exercising his right to assemble with his fellow citizens; to petition the government for the redress of his grievances; to lawfully possess arms; to resist unlawful searches and seizures; to engage in political activity; to resist the taking of his property; or to take appropriate action in defense of his children, parents, or spouse.

"(g) Persons accused of being mentally ill or mentally deficient shall not prior to adjudication of mental illness or deficiency be confined with and among persons

previously adjudged mentally ill or mentally deficient except when no other facilities are available.

"(h) Patients in a mental institution shall not be denied the right to counsel, or the right to communicate with persons outside the institution.

"(i) No United States citizen shall be transported out of this State on charges of mental illness or mental deficiency of any kind unless it be to the state of his legal residence.

"Enumeration of the foregoing rights shall not deprive a person accused of mental illness or mental deficiency of any other rights that he may have at law or in equity."

IT IS CERTAIN THAT ANYONE WHO WOULD OBJECT TO SUCH PROVISIONS IN THE LAW IF PASSED BY THE STATE LEGISLATURE OR BY CONGRESS, WOULD NOT HAVE THE WELFARE OF THE PEOPLE AT HEART, NOR BE IMBUED WITH THE SPIRIT OF RIGHT AND JUSTICE, HENCE IS IN NO SENSE TO BE CONSIDERED AMERICAN.

California appears to be awakening generally to injustices, and taking other steps in seeking the protection of the people against those who would enslave them by various means.

A published report emanating from Oakland, California, indicates that a group known as *The Permanent Medical Group in Oakland*, which is said to have been handling more than 600 psychiatric patients a year, is reorganizing its clinic to put greater emphasis ON THE CARE BY *regular physicians*. *rather than by psychiatrists*.

Considering the foreign ideologies promoted by psychiatrists and others who have been thoroughly brainwashed, THIS IS AS IT SHOULD BE. From the time of the first physician, *they and they alone*, HAVE HAD THE CARE OF THE ILL, WHETHER PHYSICALLY OR MENTALLY, *and should never have been deprived of it*.

It is further reported that the said clinic will be closed by June, or shortly thereafter, and that the present staff of psychiatrists, psychologists and social workers will be compelled to look for other positions. Undoubtedly many of those accused of mental illness, because of opinions and convictions and their privilege as *Americans*, will breathe easier.

It is further reported that Dr. A. L. Baritell, present head of the Oakland group, denies that this means any lessening of psychiatrist services to the Kaiser Health Plan, but argues, AND, IN OUR OPINION, correctly so, that much (much *too* much unreasonably and illogically so) emphasis has been based on lengthy psychotherapeutic sessions, which are (unjustly) expensive to patients. . . . Stating further that:

"We are going to try a new procedure [the only correct one]. We are going to try to integrate the emotional problems of patients into our *regular medical practice*."

We feel that every reputable, experienced American physician, will say "amen" to this conclusion. *It is certain that millions of Americans now unjustly suspected, because of nonconformity, [present-day witchcraft] will also agree.*

Following the report of the discontinuation of the Oakland Mental Health Clinic, there was further indication of the people's awakening to the danger of Mental Health Laws, as at present in force, and Clinics as now conducted. The following is from the *Los Angeles Herald and Express*, April 1, 1958.

More Mental Health Clinic Program Hit

"Proposed expansion of county mental health clinics throughout the state, aid *was opposed today by the Los Angeles County Hospital Advisory Committee.*

"The committee, headed by Mrs. Joseph H. Stout, Jr., was asked by the Board of Supervisors to study the

proposal *after a public hearing developed widely divergent opinions.*"

Another Report, following closely the above, states:

". . . an appeal in the newspapers for the public to help support the Mental Health Clinic and to build [for Clinical purposes] on the ground of the U.L.C.A. [University of California, Los Angeles]. It was stated all the money (necessary for the project) was in hand but not as yet the permission to build. A later report conveyed the information that a state legislative program for a series of Mental Health Clinics had been attacked by a Citizen committee *with such vigorous force as to upset and completely delay such legislation.*" — *Interpolations and emphasis ours.*

Information privately circulated was to the effect that much of the opposition to mental health in any form in California, is based on the exposure that a number of those most active in the interest of certain phases of Mental Health, are Marxists, and One Worlders of the worst type. Due to the fact that we refuse to deal with personalities, we omit the names, even though this information is now published by others and widely circulated.

CHAPTER THREE

A Most Vicious Destroyer of the Nervous System and Minds of Man — How Blind Can Men Be?

Since the publication of the first edition of THE AGE OF TREASON in which a chapter was devoted to this subject, much has appeared in print revealing the evils of these *erroneously* called "Happy Pills," and the many dangers to those who indulge in them. In quoting some of this published material there is unavoidable repetition to convey a full understanding to the reader. Moreover, those who seek complete knowledge on this subject will want the opinion of more than one person, or authority.

From an article appearing in *The Los Angeles Times*, February 4, 1958, under the descriptive title of "PILLS DRAWING CURTAIN OVER TAKER'S MINDS," by Mary Ann Callan, *Times Staff Writer*, we quote with comments:

"More and more Americans are becoming immersed in 'a rose-colored boredom' by popping tranquilizers¹ in their mouths to draw a curtain between themselves and the *normal* problems of living."

"Citing the fact that [at this writing] 35,000,000

¹ To be realistic and factual, we must face the fact that there is very little difference between those who indulge in tranquilizer pills, and those who are victims of narcotics. The only real difference is in the fact that as yet the tranquilizer victims are not called "dope fiends," or narcotic victims, and the Narcotic Law does not include these body, nerve and mind destroying drugs. In their degenerative effect, though slower, it is becoming a question whether the narcotics would not be less harmful as a whole.

prescriptions² for these pills were issued last year. Dr. Ralph Greenson of Beverly Hills, psychoanalyst and clinical professor of psychiatry at the UCLA Medical School, said the effect of this is to CREATE a 'FRIGHTENING CONDITION OF APATHY AND BOREDOM IN WHICH PEOPLE DON'T KNOW WHAT THEY FEEL OR WHAT THEY ARE'."

These few lines should receive the most careful consideration by those who still possess ideals and have as their incentive in life the accomplishment of some important work, and who, at the same time, desire to retain their manhood and womanhood, morality and their sanity, all of which will be destroyed by the continued use of these drugs.

"Mental health, [continued Dr. Greenson] does not mean a chronic state of [what appears to be] happiness, where there are no problems to solve. Happiness is ALWAYS the *end product* of some effort successfully completed, and the normal, healthy person has problems he is facing and trying to solve."

No psychologist, whether religious, mystic, Spiritual or practical, ever made a statement more certainly based in truth, than this. We urge for their lasting benefit, that every man and woman, every young person seeking to attain real success, study these two statements by Dr. Greenson. In them is contained the SECRET OF SUCCESS AND OF REAL HAPPINESS, BASED ON INNER PEACE, AS THE RESULT OF SUCCESS ACHIEVED BY CONSCIOUSLY MADE EFFORT.

² Considering the fact that an immense number of prescriptions are written for the drug, what then comprises the total number of people, who obtain, and take these tranquilizer pills without prescription? It is admitted by authorities that the memory of millions of people is becoming poorer every day. The effect this drug has on the mind, is certainly one of the numerous causes.

Effortless Living Goal of our Society

"He, [Dr. Greenson] believes increased use of tranquilizing drugs indicate a trend in our society; an attitude that working hard is not the thing to do, that getting out of [meeting] difficult tasks and effortless living is real happiness."³

". . . the *normal* human being HAS TO FEEL PAIN AND MISERY. Our feet hurt; our shoes are too tight; so we do something about it. It's as simple as that. WITHOUT FEELING [uncomfortable] WE DO NOTHING. All tranquilized people do is grow older, nothing else."⁴

"Pointing out [one of] the good effects of tranquilizing drugs, the doctor stated: 'it is becoming harder to find an agitated patient in psychiatric ward for a student to observe [or the physician in order to diagnose a case].' This, he said, was the original purpose of the drugs — to calm psychotics so they could be treated by doctors.

"Addicts Lose Contact with *Themselves*"

"But the use of tranquilizers has gone too far. Patients who could be normal if they FACED THEIR PROBLEMS [as MAN was intended to] now say: 'What are my

³ This is exactly what the Marxist, the enemies of God and men, the One Worlders, sincerely work for. It is the purpose of all their efforts. If they can establish this illusion, and delusion, in the minds of men and as a result, induce them to become victims of this drug, become mentally apathetic, then their dream of world domination will be achieved. The one major object standing in their path is *American Manhood*, and *manly resistance* against all interference with human rights.

⁴ This statement is greatly in error. The end result, in all too many cases, is mental illness, helping to over-fill the already crowded asylums. This, also, is the hope of our enemies.

troubles; who am I?⁵ rather than 'I have problems' [from which I want to free myself].

"They are losing contact with themselves, so that they no longer have any dreams for the future, or any creative expression"⁶ Dr. Greenson continued. 'They don't even know whether their wives or husbands are angry. They live a boarding house marriage,' just eating and sleeping without any deep contact [or feeling].

"People who are psychologically dependent on tranquilizers have a general sense of futility, a vague feeling or emptiness, without any insight to do anything about it. These people are harder to treat and help.

"Dr. Greenson believes that some of this attitude has been handed down to youths,⁷ who are urged to block out disturbing thoughts and problems—*conform and be popular*.

"Education reflects this," continued Dr. Greenson. "Make it easy for the students [supplant study and effort by fun.] To be a scientist, for example, you must *work*.

⁵ This is the ultimate end of the Escapist, whether brought about by the taking of drugs, or the numerous other factors in the life of man today.

⁶ Compare this state of man's mind with that of fifty years ago when the young man was fired by a *dynamic desire to meet, and conquer, the world*, and many did *just that*. Many others, not meeting with as great success, did help to build up a mighty nation. *Today there are millions of drones instead of the millions of soul-fired enthusiasts of fifty years ago*. What an outlook for humanity as a whole!

⁷ This statement of attitude being "handed down" is far too mild. The actual truth is, that since the time of Dewey and his cohorts, and the instituting of "Progressive education" *every effort has been, and is still being made, to bring about this mentality deadening condition*. To change youth, *the entire educational procedure must be changed*.

Nation Has Saturday, Sunday Neurosis

"Just as the sick person is always worse on a holiday, so we as a nation have a 'Saturday and Sunday neurosis, no longer knowing what to do with the time.'⁸

"The national pursuit of constant satisfaction [satiety] can only lead to more boredom and apathy. . . . If we don't suffer pain as an individual, *we cannot grow*. IF WE DON'T KEEP GROWING, WE CAN NEVER KNOW REAL HAPPINESS [THAT MUST BE FOUND IN THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF THINGS WELL DONE.]"—*Emphasis, interpolation and comments ours.*

⁸ Although it will be vehemently denied, this is a devastating, destructive disease. It is beginning to heavily afflict the millions of "short hour day" and "holiday" workers. They have no keen desire to accomplish any thing, or *becoming different* from what they are. Their ideal is the short work day, the heavy income, without the slightest idea of how to make constructive use of their spare time. The result: A *deadly body, mind and Soul destroying inertia*.

CHAPTER THREE

Section One

Will the American People Remain Asleep Until it is Too Late to Save Themselves?

While America and other friendly countries were busy publishing scores of books denouncing Hitler and others for their attempts to subjugate mankind, by their vicious methods, American citizens were manufacturing potent, mind and nerve destroying drugs, and selling them without restriction. According to reputable medical authorities to be quoted, some of these drugs are powerful enough to destroy both man's mind and his nervous system, and in less than one fifth the time required by European methods.

It is well known that all geniuses, artists and outstanding professional men are high strung and emotional. Their nervous system can readily be compared to the strings of fine musical instruments, and, due to this, they are outstanding. If this tension—it is a tension—is reduced in any manner, by any other than natural means, the artists, the genius, and the leader in any field, may quickly become commonplace. This tension of mind and nerves is the price they must pay, and should willingly pay, for being what they are.

Those artists, geniuses, and leaders who are real at heart, who love the work in which they are engaged, often seek ways and means to alleviate the tension when not engaged in their chosen work by means of some form of physical recreation, AND THIS IS THE ONLY NATURAL WAY. There are millions of men and women, who are not heart and Soul devoted to their efforts. These readily fall victims to anything that will bring quick relief, with little or no effort on their part.

There is another class, also numbering millions, who suffer from some ailment or another, some pain or discomfort, some mental ill-ease. These are either ignorant of the laws of Nature, or unwilling to make an effort to follow the proper procedure to free themselves from the conditions from which they suffer. They do not know, or do not care, that pain, discomfort, uneasiness, inability to rest or find peace, are *not* something to be suppressed; but are MAN'S REAL FRIENDS, indicating as they do, that there is something radically wrong in the system and in need of correction or healing. These also become ready victims to any remedy that promises quick, even though only temporary relief.

This new destroyer, purely American—so far as is known—in origin, is commonly known as "Happy Pills." It is a drug named *Meprobamate* (there are now numerous other drugs for the same purpose), and sold under various names. The drug is advertised as a sedative, with no mention of its dangers or ultimate effects. It is advertised as capable of reducing tensions and anxieties, by interfering with the central nervous system and spinal cord. The drug itself is derived from a muscle relaxing drug called *Methenesis*; a chemical most dangerous to the stability of the mental-nervous system.

Many have become accustomed to the drug. The claim is made that it is not habit-forming, hence man will not become *addicted* to it. However, it is also reported that one drug house profits a million dollars or more a month. This huge amount having been paid by THOSE WHO ARE DESTROYING THEMSELVES QUICKLY, MIND, BODY, AND SOUL,—IF THEY POSSESS ANY.

To offhand expose the danger of any drug, or condemn it, does not prove anything. The men who KNOW, because of their wide experience with drugs, and drug victims, are honorable, reputable and experienced physicians. They are not the pill

peddlers with degrees, who so greatly profit by their sales, or by prescribing them.

According to published reports, Dr. George W. Calver, attending physician to Congress, made the statement:

"I do not prescribe tranquilizers and never have prescribed them for the simple reason that they *destroy individual enterprise and initiative.*"—*Emphasis ours.*

To destroy or negate individual enterprise is to invalidate individual desire, *the basis of all achievement made by man;* making man mediocre, a drone or robot, easily controlled and directed. To destroy initiative, is to destroy creative imagination, making man less than a man; the artist becoming a "has-been."

Dr. Samuel Freedman, President of the New York County Medical Society is reported that on becoming aware of the widespread use of these preparations, and their harmful results, to have given as his opinion that:

"We should tighten up all along the line, certainly on drugs that can CHANGE THE INDIVIDUAL'S BEHAVIOUR."¹—*Emphasis ours.*

Dr. Freedman's statement that these drugs may change the individual's behavior should be horrifying to every normal human being, implying as it does, that the human may become inhuman or unhuman; the moral, immoral; the humane, a criminal; man, God's handiwork, less than the beasts in the field, reverting to the age before reason was born.

How great the danger of these drugs has become is freely

¹ Since the above was written, New York Physicians and the Medical Society have taken steps to stop the sale of these drugs except on prescription. Reports are to the effect that in New York, like in all other places, there are "pill peddlers," men who disgrace a noble profession, who are ready and willing to prescribe them for anyone willing to pay the fee.

expressed by Dr. Harry C. Solomon, Director of the Boston Psychopathic Hospital.

"The scramble for these drugs has almost reached a stage of *infectious mass hysteria, comparable to the dancing mania of the Middle Ages.*²

"It is time to call a halt to the over enthusiasm of doctors, pharmaceutical houses and the public at large. *These drugs are too dangerous to fool around with.*"—*Emphasis ours.*

Effie Alley, writing for the *Chicago Daily American*, is reported to have told its readers:

"A warning of possible unhappy effects of 'happy pills' was sounded . . . at the American Psychologic Association convention.

"While the pills relieve a case of 'blues' for a time, they may end up by making the MENTAL CLIMATE OF THE DEPRESSED PERSON MORE DISMAL.³

"In other instances they 'tranquilize so COMPLETELY THAT ALL MOTIVE FOR ACTION IS LOST,' several experts said today."⁴

² Dr. Solomon might have mentioned the mania of witchcraft in conjunction with the dancing mania; one being as "reasonable" as the other.

³ This after-depression may lead, and frequently does, to a neurosis which will end in an unconquerable desire for self destruction.

⁴ Self-responsibility may be completely lost; the human actually becoming a living zombie or robot. This is just as Marxists, *et. al.*, planned that drugging with Sodium Fluorides should do to their victims. How crude their methods proved to be compared to modern procedures, which accomplish the same thing in a far shorter time, and by the victim's own action.

Dr. Jonathan Cole of the National Institute for Mental Health is reported to have said:

"I've seen people so slowed down that they just sat and did nothing for a month."

This is an easy method of creating drones. It would be most wise for the Asiatic destroyers from Moscow to come to America, and become proficient in modern scientific methods, making their people at once happy while conditioning them for their own specific purpose, at one and the same time.

Dr. Arthur Backrath, University of Virginia Hospital, stated:

". . . the pills don't solve a thing. And the person who uses them habitually isn't likely to, either."

Dr. Backrath is reported to have further stated:

"It is estimated that \$7,000,000 worth of a single tranquilizer was sold last year. In some states such drugs are becoming available even without a doctor's prescription. Millions of Americans are gulping them down like aspirin."

To digress: THE INORDINATE PROFIT MANIA IS PROVING ITSELF TO BE AS GREAT A MENACE TO HUMANITY AS WORLD CONQUEST, AND RIGHT HERE IN ONCE ENLIGHTENED AMERICA. The profit system is essential to a nation's progress, and the welfare of the people, but the inordinate desire for exorbitant profits, and especially so when it is to the permanent harm of the people, *is the greatest crime the human creature can commit, and no punishment devisable by man is too severe.*

Dr. Cornan Kornetsky of the National Institute of Mental Health is reported as warning:

"The more neurotic the person, the greater the effects of the drug.

"We have seen DEFINITE impairment of functions,

particularly of muscular coordination and judgment in many cases.⁵

"It would be very much like driving with somebody who had too much to drink."—*Emphasis ours.*

The Illusion That Blinds the Reason of Millions

"It can't happen here."

This is still the opinion of all but a few Americans, despite the fact that it *is* happening every day, possibly to their best friend or a loved one, and they will not become aware of it until it is too late. A still greater number believe that Americans are too well informed to fall into the various traps set for them by the enemies of God and man. They do not believe that drugs openly sold to them are potent to reduce their mental acumen, their outlook on life, their manhood or womanhood, their antagonism to anything that would make man less a man, or interfere with their freedom, their love of family, or interest in their special activities.

How wrong they are! How utterly wrong! Very few are aware that there are many methods of *brainwashing*, methods far more subtle and innocent appearing than those devised by the European criminals. Americans are not generally aware that advertising is the most potent of ALL BRAINWASHING. Just a little advertising, repeated from time to time; advertising of a kind that people believe to be nothing more than *making things known* and, *presto, the work is done*. And they, THE

⁵This is one of the effects the Marxists and their cohorts wanted to achieve with Sodium Fluoride in water and food, for those they sought to destroy, or enslave easily. Now men—are they men?—have learned how this can be accomplished by an easy method; the victims asking for it, and willingly paying the price. What is happening to human reason? To humanity's outlook on life? To man's desire for achievement to ride in the clouds with the gods of creation?

PEOPLE THEMSELVES, *will do the drugging, the mind and morality destroying, the roboting*, without further effort on the part of those who profit by their betrayal.

You don't believe it? Then just devote a few minutes to a study of the many serious articles now appearing in numerous widely read magazines, telling of the drugs known as "tranquilizers," being sold to the tune of millions of dollars monthly to all classes of people, most notably to the artists in various professions, the physically and mentally ill, and you will also get an idea of what these "tranquilizers" will do to the millions who quickly fall victims to them—DO IT EASILY, SMOOTHLY, QUICKLY, and EXACTLY what it has taken the forces of all the Asiatics, in the various countries, many years to accomplish.

Daily an ever greater number of physicians are becoming aware of the terrible possibilities following the use of the so-called "happy" or "tranquilizing" pills.

If the public is unguarded by capable, responsible physicians, these "tranquilizers" may actually accomplish the DEgenerating and DEMoralizing of the mass, accomplishing all the Marxist planned for them without effort on their part, making of Americans by the million, a docile, irresponsible, moronic, readily governed people.

Dr. John L. Harvey, Deputy Commissioner of the Food and Drug Administration, is reported in the Philadelphia Inquirer, March 22, 1956, as saying:

"... Some physicians are at times using the drug unwisely on infants and children whose personalities are still developing. . . . It is hard to believe a 'well-rounded individual' could develop from a 'tranquilized' environment in which the child has no knowledge of the stresses and strain to which he will be exposed in later life."—

This can mean but one thing: THAT THE SENSE OF

HUMAN INDIVIDUALITY AND PERSONAL RESPONSIBILITY CAN GRADUALLY BE DESTROYED IN THE CHILD FOR WHOM THIS DRUG IS UNWISELY PRESCRIBED, OR GIVEN THE CHILD BY ITS PARENTS. If this is true, and it unquestionably is, then a vast number are in the process of becoming little more than morons and robots. Dr. Ralph W. Gerard, University of Michigan Neurophysiology Professor, states that:

"... one-third of all prescriptions American doctors write today are tranquilizers."

And Dr. Harvey gives as his opinion:

"... that as early as 1956, doctors wrote 34,000,000 prescriptions for tranquilizer drugs."

This does not take into consideration the millions of such tablets sold by drug peddlers who make a business of this infamous traffic, and we have no record of present sales.

Dr. Robert H. Felix, director of the National Institute of Mental Health, is quoted as stating:

"... the question whether the drugs should be given small children 'is one of the things we have not answered'."

He further added:

"... it might be better to find some other treatment if tranquilizers reduce children's anxieties (*a normal development of which is the sense of morality and personal responsibility, making man a MAN*) so much that 'they don't care whether they change their ways or whether they [have to] be corrected for something, or do not have the drive or motivation to put forward their best efforts in school.'

If this sense which is usually normally developed as the child advances in years is lacking, then the consciousness of the human-morality and responsibility in the grown child will be minus the normal mental capacity to mature, and it will in no sense be a truly responsible being.

Dr. W. P. Dearing, Deputy Surgeon General of Public Health Service, conscious of the danger, summed up the warning⁶ in a few words:

"We should start to remind ourselves and remind physicians and parents who would like to have their children kept quieter, and the individual who would like to be relieved of his worries . . . [that] *not in every case* is relief from worry BEST FOR THE INDIVIDUAL OR FOR SOCIETY."—*Emphasis ours.*

The fact must be faced that in the vast majority of instances adults take the drug because they are not physically, mentally or emotionally sufficiently developed to face their responsibilities, and to pacify themselves they seek vicarious relief in these drugs. Frankly speaking, they had already more or less degenerated into weaklings.

Children in their normal, natural development, pass through stages of stress and strain of which the outward symptoms *are* annoying, though necessary in their development into normal youth, and then into manhood or womanhood.

Parents, as a rule, should face the question: AM I WILLING TO MEET MY FULL RESPONSIBILITY THAT MY CHILD, OR CHILDREN, GROW UP INTO NORMAL MEN AND WOMEN SUCH AS WERE OUR FOREFATHERS, OR SHALL I DRUG THEM INTO MENTAL-NERVOUS INACTIVITY, MAKING OF THEM SUBHUMAN BEINGS, SEMI-MORONS AND PERHAPS IMBECILES. A DISGRACE TO MYSELF AND HUMANITY; THE EASY VICTIM OF

⁶ To keep the record straight, we admit that we do not agree with everything that many Health Officers endorse, such as mass or compulsory medication as advocated by some. We do heartily agree and endorse all they say relative to tranquilizing medication and its possible negative effects on those who unwisely, or unguardedly, take them, or give them to their children. No warning can be too impressive.

WHOEVER WOULD USE THEM TO THEIR OWN INTEREST,
BENEFIT OF PROFIT?

In the *Wall Street Journal*, certainly a conservative newspaper, issue of June 6, 1957, there appeared the following item:

"The American Medical Association, meeting in New York, condemned the 'shocking' use of amphetamine, a powerful stimulant, by professional, college and even high school athletes. The drug turns them into super-athletes,⁷ the association said, but *may lead to violent behavior—drug addiction or physical damage.*"—*Emphasis ours.*

A few days later, as a rebuttal of the statements made by the American Medical Association, again in the *Wall Street Journal*, the following item appeared:

"The Health News Institute, *representing the drug manufacturing industry*, challenged the American Medical Association's assertion that amphetamine—so called 'pep pills'—is dangerous. The institute said the drug 'is one of the safest available to medical practice'."⁸

This conflict of opinion and the unrestricted sale of

⁷ Even a high school student should possess sufficient knowledge to know that any drug which has the potency to stimulate either nerves or muscles *above the normal* for a period of time, *has a reaction; and that after use, such a reaction follows, the natural strength of nerve and muscle falling below par, until the persons using such superficial energy producers become de-energized. The nature of such stimulants is much the same in its demoralizing effect as that of narcotics.*

⁸ This argument is specious. Certainly the drug is all right *in the hands, and under the supervision of an experienced physician.* The spokesman for the American Medical Association clearly stated: "Its use by professional, college and even high school athletes," i.e., the laity, is to be deplored.

destructive drugs, while "simples" are denied the people, connects directly with another important, constantly increasing source of irritation to more and more people. Less than fifty years ago there was hardly a family living any distance from the larger towns, or the office of a physician, who did not have simple remedies such as *Sweet Spirits of Nitre*, to be given in simple temperatures, or to rub on baby's gum to ease the pain while teething. There was *Tincture of Pleurisy Root* for the pains of pleurisy; *Tincture of Calendula and Myrr* as a dressing for cuts and sores, and a possible dozen other simple, harmless remedies, all for a specific purpose with which the mother was thoroughly familiar, and had at hand in an emergency, when she had to use her own resources because of distance, or the inability to get in touch with a physician. Gradually, within a comparatively few years, Laws have been enacted in most States making it impossible for the family to obtain even *Sweet Spirits of Nitre* without a prescription, when baby is teething, or has a slight temperature, the while extremely dangerous drugs are sold openly.

More and more you hear the expression: ". . . the doctors!" because the people feel that it is the physicians who have had these Laws enacted, rather than possibly the pharmaceutical houses. How many of the people feel this way? Count the number who have turned away from the ever-ready family physician to chiropractic, and other non-medical practitioners⁹ and you have the answer.

⁹ This in no sense implies any adverse opinion of chiropractors or other non-medical modalities. It is a simple statement of facts; of the changes taking place in the minds of the public, and this should serve as a warning of what may ultimately happen.

CHAPTER THREE

Section Two

Grossly Misleading Information Relative to the Vicious Destroyers of the Physical, Mental and Nervous System of Men

Perhaps one of the most misleading items dealing with the so-called tranquilizing pills, appeared in a "feature" article in *The Sun*, Baltimore, Md., March 9, 1958, by Frank Henry. This is misleading because of the almost certainty that only the first two paragraphs will be read by many readers.

"Latest in the glittering procession of marvel¹ drugs which mark this era are the little tranquilizer pills that are flowing by the hundreds of millions from pharmaceutical laboratories. Their unique, non-habit-forming² power over the minds of men and animals has fascinated the public imagination³ as no other drug ever has done.

¹ The use of the word "marvel" at once conveys the idea of quick relief to the reader, who may be suffering from some slight indisposition from which he seeks "escape," not cure. The relief quickly obtained, though in no sense a cure, or the removal of the *cause*, will naturally induce him to resort to the same "marvel" whenever he does not feel "up to par" with the result, that not only is a habit formed, but the *cause* may become chronic and incurable.

² This is a wholly *misleading* statement. Physicians who have been called upon to treat those in the habit of resorting to these "Happy pills," know all too well, that the drug holds them bound as securely as any narcotic. Combine the idea of a "marvelous" drug and "non-habit forming" and you have one more victim.

³ It does have power over the minds of men, and therein is its danger and destructive potency.

"A definite influence in the lives of nerve-driven Americans, the pills ease the rubs and bumps of their daily routines.⁴ And at the same time they have opened new vistas for physicians to study the complexities of the mind and have become a valuable adjunct in treatment of heart patients,⁵ as well as those with other ailments.

Doctors Express Fears

"Tranquilizers may be had only through a doctor's prescription. But one prescription may be filled again and again⁶—no renewal needed. And reports indicate that those having prescriptions do have them refilled, for themselves as well as for their friends and friends of friends—signifying a creeping spread of tranquility in the atmosphere of high pressure and urgency that pervades American business life.

⁴ The normally, nerve-and-mind healthy person is *not* adversely affected by the "trials and tribulations" of business or everyday life. He accepts these as normal, everyday matters to be *met, conquered and forgotten*. It is *actually in this meeting and overcoming conditions and circumstances, without artificial means, that he displays his manhood and strength, and finds the peace that is satisfaction, which can be found in no other manner. Strength is gained by overcoming, and not by drugging.*

⁵ It is questionable whether these tranquility pills ever helped a heart condition. They may succeed in dulling the symptoms, but they do nothing to *remove the cause, and bring about a cure—the reason for all medication.*

⁶ This is the most dangerous of the entire matter. Those who have bought the pills either by prescription, or obtained them otherwise, and have tried them, obtaining what they believe to have been actual relief, will have their prescription filled time and again, until they have become thoroughly habituated. In order to obtain Narcotics there must be a new prescription, why not apply the same restriction on these nerve and mentality destroyers.

"If this creeping continues, some physicians fear it may affect the traditional American go-get-it spirit and breed in its place a spirit less aggressive, less alert.⁷ They say a normal amount of anxiety and tension in a healthy person is beneficial, for it indicates awareness, an ability to recognize and tackle problems with energy and vision.⁷

"Thus the validity of the little pills has become questionable as a panacea for the harassed business and professional worker,⁸ although their use in the doctor's kit is a great boon in bestowing many benefits when skillfully administered.⁹

Used in India for Years¹⁰

"The active ingredient of one type of tranquilizer was introduced into this country in 1954 from India, via

⁷ This part of the problem has already been dealt with, though it is well to repeat, because of its effect on the physical, nerve and mental health, and the fact that a certain amount of tension is essential for man's welfare. To keep normal and healthy, it is necessary to labor until the body becomes tired. It is only by this means that balance of body, mind and nerves can be maintained, and man can achieve the goal intended by God; or by Nature.

⁸ This statement is far too mild. It is doubtful if any experienced physician today regards these drugs as a *panacea* for any ailment, complaint or disease.

⁹ This drug, like all other drugs, has its place in the practice of medicine. The physician alone, should have the right to prescribe it, or in any way release it to the laity.

¹⁰ Because a drug has been used in India is no recommendation. Take as an example one that has been employed by them for no one knows how many thousands of years: Indian Hemp, or *Cannabis indica*. This has been employed in certain nervous cases by American physicians for many years. However, it is considered one of the most destructive of Narcotics and obtain-

Europe. Its properties have been known since the dawn of history in India where it has been the doctor's great virtuoso drug; a cure-all even in its unrefined stage; the bearer of calmness and happiness to those troubled in body or spirit.

A Statement Frequently Made

"But it has proved much more to the discerning psychiatrist. It has enabled some patients who have been in institutions for many years—particularly the schizophrenics, or "split personalities"—to return to normal life, to be self-supporting, to take their places again within their families. Even those patients who have been in institutions so long that they have "lost" their families, have been enabled to live by themselves, and become in some measure useful members of society.

A Contradiction *Personalities Integrated*

The basis of their work was laid during the three years just past in using tranquilizers on patients. In that time they have treated several thousands of patients. Of these something less than 100 (all long-time patients) have been able to go back to useful life.¹¹

able only under the Narcotic Law. As a matter of fact, the Tincture of this drug would do all that the "happy pills" are claimed to do, and it is questionable if it would be more destructive to men's minds.

¹¹ If these drugs are so potent for the relief of certain diseases, why the small number of those treated with them? This claim has been contradicted by many experienced physicians who quickly turned to more effective and certain remedies. The great danger is in the *permanent integration of personalities*. This is the very thing desired by the One Worlders.

Calming to Patients

"Dr. Enoch Callaway, 3rd, assistant professor of psychiatry at the University of Maryland Medical School, says that the judicious use of tranquilizers is calming to patients, makes them more receptive to psychiatric treatment.

"'Tranquilizers, collectively, are an important tool for exploration of the human mind,' said Dr. Callaway. 'They have given us the means for pulling aside the curtains just a little to see what goes on beyond.'

"I believe that tranquilizers may open the way for more extensive use of chemicals in treating mental patients. In 25 or 30 years from now I think we will be using chemicals a great deal more than at present. It doesn't mean that chemicals will take the place of psychiatry. It means that the two will work together more effectively."

We have no quarrel with the physician for the use of tranquilizers or any other remedy or drug. The physician is qualified to diagnose his case and prescribe accordingly. The laity is not so trained, and is not qualified to select a remedy for the imaginary, or real ailment, from which it suffers. Furthermore, the patients treated are not ordinary cases, but more or less hopeless mental sufferers for which no certain remedy has yet been discovered.

Anent this vastly important problem as it concerns the health, well-being and even *sanity* of the American people, there appears to be a conflict between the Physicians as represented by the American Medical Association, who alone have the knowledge as a result of experience, of what drugs should be released to the people, and which should be restricted to the use of the physician alone, and the Health News Institute.

Admissions

According to reports, Dr. Frank J. Ayd of Baltimore, Md., and Dr. Nathan S. Kline, Director of Research for the New York State Department of Mental Hygiene gave testimony before the Government Operations Committee. The testimony opened an investigation of what Subcommittee Chairman Blatnik said was *concern by some physicians that drug houses have resorted to unscientific [unethical] and deceptive sales promotion to ballyhoo their products.*

Dr. Ayd is reported to have testified that PROPERLY ADMINISTERED¹² the risk of addiction, and of side actions may be annoying, but not dangerous.¹²

"At the same time, he stated, 'the most sanguine physician would NOT prescribe a tranquilizer for what might be termed normal anxiety'."¹³

Most Firms Adhere to Ethical Practices

"On the score of advertising, Dr. Ayd said most drug firms 'cherish and seek the medical profession's confidence and respect.'

"He conceded that some firms¹⁴ may violate good taste and ethical standards, but added: 'Fortunately, physicians, by their training and experience, view all drug advertising with a critical eye. . . . While a few of the so-called tranquilizers have been advertised unwisely, the

¹² We have admitted right along that these drugs, or any drug in the hands of experienced physicians, is entirely proper, but not when openly sold and self-prescribed by the laity. Side effects may be at a minimum *when under the care of a physician.*

¹³ Nevertheless, the laity is buying them, or having them prescribed, by the millions for just this purpose. What is to be said of physicians prescribing them although there is no actual symptomatic indication for them?

majority¹⁴ of manufacturers have exercised admirable caution and restrain in their promotion'."

"The 'occasional excesses' of promotional activity, he said, have already resulted in development of a self-regulating code of ethics among pharmaceutical organizations.¹⁵ He said this code is now well along in preparation and meets most of the objections which have been raised."

Finally, in matters of this kind, Americans are still free men and a few can be saved from THEMSELVES. If it is their wish to commit physical and mental suicide by voluntarily falling prey to such drugs, it is their privilege, but let us try at least to save the innocent children and youths.

¹⁴ The question arises: Is it these firms who, in one way or another, make the drug available to the laity and to unethical physicians? Should not the medical profession as a whole, not only openly condemn such firms, but make it impossible for them to do business? Are not these firms of the same character as the Hitlers and Stalins?

¹⁵ These so engaged should be commended for their effort. For the sake of humanity, let us hope they will succeed.

CHAPTER THREE

Section Three

Certain Drugs May Cause Mental and Physical Changes in People

According to a news item which appeared in the *Kansas City Times*, November 19, 1957, under the heading:

"Medicines Change People"

"New York, Nov. 18, (A.P.)—Extra long use of some common medicine may cause *mental and physical changes in people*, a Johns Hopkins University researcher reported today.¹ —*Emphasis ours.*

Food producers and processors are permitted to do that for which the physician would be read out of the profession—*mass Medication without need by the "patient," bringing about abnormalities too varied to name.*

"This new evidence of drug damage comes from the study of rats, Dr. Curt P. Richter, psychologist, told the autumn meeting of the Natural Academy of Science.

"Any one of several common drugs and hormones

¹ If this is true, and few physicians with experience will deny it, after the usual more or less limited time such medicines are prescribed *for the ill* by the physician, and then discontinued, there often are noticeable mental and physical changes in the individual.

The observant person, he need not be a physician, is fully aware of the damage done to the people as a whole, as shown by the enormous number of misfits for military services, and the constantly increasing number with failing memories, showing the mental deterioration taking place in the millions.

fed to rats for one to four months 'may produce damage from which the rat never recovers.

"In humans, Dr. Richard said, such medicines may be responsible for some periodic diseases and mental disturbance.²

"There was indication of some damage to a center in the brain. . . ."³—Emphasis ours.

So-called "Happy pills" are now actually a "common drug" because of their extensive professionally unindicated use. THEIR AFTER AFFECTS TIE IN NICELY WITH THE MARXISTS IDEA OF THE USE OF DRUGS OR CHEMICALS SUCH AS SODIUM FLUORIDE, STILBESTROL AND OTHER TOXIC SUBSTANCES FOR THE SUBJUGATION OF MANKIND. THE WORST FEATURE IS THAT THESE NEW AGENTS ARE NOT MARXIST IN INCEPTION, BUT OF PURELY AMERICAN ORIGIN — AND THE VICTIMS ARE FELLOW AMERICAN SUBJECTS.

Many who are interested in human welfare are aware of this and lending their voices in publicly warning the people. One such is the author Aldous Huxley, according to a news-

² If this can happen in a few months, under the supervision of experienced physicians, who watch every symptom, it is not difficult to guess the results of a continued, unsupervised ingestion of Toxic additives and various drugs. These results were earlier noted in Russian prisoners when Sodium Fluoride was placed into their drinking water, and Toxic substances in their foods. In as far as can be learned, the water was not drugged for the soldiers or useful citizens, nor their foods adulterated as is so almost universal in America.

³ If there is such damage to the brain, which of course affects thinking and reasoning, in so short a time, it can readily be recognized what a continuous unguarded and uncontrolled ingestion would do. This is also what is occurring under our present system of food and water adulteration with Toxic substances.

paper report as published in the *Tacoma News Tribune*, March 28, 1958, under the title:

Happy Pills Might Capture Men's Mind

"Los Angeles, AP—If you can get people to swallow enough happy pills, you may get them to swallow anything," says Aldous Huxley.

"Tranquilizers are an extraordinary social phenomenon," Huxley said yesterday at a luncheon forum of an organization called *Viewpoint*. In fact, the mindchanging⁴ drugs may turn out to be vastly more important in shaping the future than sputniks⁵ or other goings-on in space."

"A dictatorial government⁶ could really guarantee itself against revolution by giving its people a drug to make them happy."

"Huxley said this type of drug could be used along

⁴ If it were only a matter of mind changing, the problem would not be so serious, but it is actually a process of mental deterioration such as Hitler and Stalin tried to bring about by Toxic substances; promoting mental incapacity, and making the self-created victim an easy subject to control, and of no value to society except as a robot or slave.

⁵ The healthy, strong American mind of the past had no fear of implements of destruction. They were fully capable of inventing counter-implements of destruction; fully able to meet the enemy on any ground. Today the degenerating minds of the millions, due to the use of deadening drugs, denatured and adulterated foods, is rapidly reaching the point where they are incapable of preparing for their own self protection. The dreams of Stalin and Asiatic ideologists are rapidly being materialized, mostly due to the inertia of the mass.

⁶ Unfortunately, a dictatorial government is no longer a necessity for this purpose. The former sane, well-balanced people of America are doing this to themselves.

with brainwashing, and high powered advertising techniques⁸ as weapons against men's minds.

"He said subliminal projection—the flashing of messages—[a subtle form of hypnotization] on T.V. screens so fast they are absorbed only subconsciously—may be developed to such a peak of efficiency in five years that a person's mind could be controlled without his knowledge."⁹

⁸ This pre-supposes a terrible danger to the American people as a whole. The only safety lies in boycotting all television broadcasts unless stringent protective Laws are enacted. It would require strong self-will on the part of the people to forego their television entertainment, but certainly the value of sanity is incomparable.

⁹ What is to be said of people—advertisers of many types—who agree to use this kind of service? Could the viciousness of a Hitler, a Stalin, or any Marxist, be compared to them? Would this not be Americans destroying Americans in both body and mind? Truly it has been said: Fear not the enemies without, but those within. Unbelievable as this is of Americans, it is nevertheless being demonstrated to be true.

CHAPTER FOUR

Veterans in the Snake Pit¹ — The Inhumanity to Man in the Twentieth Century by Methods Unthought of Half a Century Ago — Shocking Quotations from an Article That Appeared in American Mercury Magazine

"In my own case, a culmination of marital and financial troubles led to an attempt at suicide. Like so many others, as soon as the razor blade slid across my wrists, I changed my mind. I was taken to Bellevue where I was examined by a psychiatrist and told that I was being 'booked into a Veterans' Hospital for 60 days' rest.'

"Instead, I was committed to Kings Park State Hospital. I did not see the judge who committed me, nor was I informed that I had the right to see him. I was denied legal counsel and telephone contact with the outside. When I finally discovered what had happened and where they had sent me, it was too late. This was only the first of a long list of gruesome discoveries. . . .

"Only the other day I noted that the director of one

¹ A United States Senator to whom we had shown this part of the present chapter, called it "Scandal Sheet" news. Admittedly, we were taken somewhat aback. Two days after we received the return of the copy with the notation, while listening to a radio report, we were shocked to hear the announcement by Dr. Dickenson Richards, a man of unimpeachable authority and reputation, informing the public of actual conditions in the famous Bellevue Hospital. We were too startled to take notes, but many did, among them John T. Flynn, who quoted from his notes in his broadcast of May 5, 1957, which we reproduce, giving him full credit:

of our greatest American Hospitals—the famous Bellevue Hospital supported by the City of New York—called attention to the *incredible* condition of disrepair of this famous and ancient institution. Dr. Dickenson Richards testified that the place is *shockingly understaffed*. He called attention to the fact that *two of the elevators in the main building have broken loose and fallen into the basement*. The Hospital's dilapidated electric power system is *nearly broken down*. The heating system is *hopelessly wasteful*; walls are *crumbling* and plumbing is *disintegrating*. The Clinics are *overcrowded*. The engineering bureau says *sixty-nine persons is the maximum for safety on one floor, but there are three hundred. There is a shortage of everything—inadequate laboratories and services.*"

—*Emphasis ours.*

Is this also "Scandal Sheet" news or "Yellow Sheet Journalism?" How does it compare with the "Snake Pit" story? What can, or cannot, happen in such overcrowded conditions, and irresponsible, perhaps almost criminal *mis*-management?

Is this the fault of the physicians in charge or the medical profession? *It is not.* Just suppose some of the billions of dollars so freely allotted to decadent nations were turned over for the modernizing of these Snake Pits, and crumbling hospitals, in which thousands are hopelessly confined, what a change there could be, and the suffering American citizens would benefit.

"There is a VA 'Contact Man' maintained at the hospital whose ostensible job [supposedly working in the interest of Veterans who gave their all for the **FREEDOM OF MANKIND**] is to consult with and aid veterans confined there. . . . For months I wrote this man and tried to get an interview. My letters were never acknowledged. When at last I did see him I asked him why, if I was sick

enough to be confined, I wasn't drawing a pension. He answered blandly that, according to VA standards, *I wasn't sick and therefore didn't deserve a pension.*

"At Kings Park, one of the most heinous practices imaginable is a living, day-to-day fact: THE TOTAL LACK OF SEGREGATION BETWEEN THE SANE AND INSANE! Children suffering from no other 'mental illness' than persistent truancy or minor theft, the senile, the alcoholic, the railroaded, the rational, all thrown indiscriminately into wards with the violent, the diseased, the homosexual.² The official reason given for this is the 'well ones' will help the 'sick ones.' However, the actual result is conditions so loathsome and unbearable that the sane often 'crack,' thus justifying the hospital for having them there in the first place.

"But there were a few of us who, in spite of attendants, did complain. Our statements were written down. Later, the doctors began to imply a condition of paranoia. We were threatened openly by the attendants, and what few privileges we did have were immediately cut off.

New York City is one of the greatest cities in the world. It is considered a center of high culture: it has its Metropolitan Opera; its art galleries; its historical shrines; and yet it tolerates a Sodom, Gomorrah, and Babylon in its midst, doing nothing about it. The Christianity and Judaism of New York is apparently so self-righteous, that they cannot tolerate King Saud in

² There was a time, not long since when Americans, Christian and Jews, even atheists, shuddered at the thought of homosexuality, considering it a crime to be severely punished. However, this was before decadent nations Legalized it.

their midst because he has a few slaves, but is wholly blind to the grossest of immoralities.

Question: Would not these unfortunates, who are ill and because of the conditions in which they are placed, and led into the lowest of low practices, be far better off as slaves, where they might at least remain human creatures?

New York, with all its vaunted culture, apparently is caring not at all for the fate of its unfortunates. Is this the attitude of sane people? A sane man, whether Christian or Jew, is supposed to be Godly, these terms, as well as that of "sanity," imply morality, kindness, humaneness, sympathy, suffering in the sufferings of others, and sorrow in their misfortunes. One cannot help but question: *Who are the insane?*

"The second visit found me in the Maximum Security Ward. I had been transferred there because I had tried to escape.

"I was summoned and brought into an office. The medical inspector was once again seated at the desk. Back of him stood the ward doctor and the ward attendants. I was asked my name and if I had any complaints. I had. They were noted. I was then told that perhaps I was 'mistaken.' I protested. My protests and complaints were then disregarded on the following grounds: according to my 'record' I felt the world was against me. My hearing was concluded. The medical inspector's last words were: 'Get him out of here and put him back where he belongs!'

"A small clique of homosexuals³ can be found in

³ In any normal, moral society and its institutions, those in charge would be held responsible for its inmates and their conduct, and the very first offender would be separated from the others, isolated and properly treated. Any failure on this score places the guilt upon the entire citizenry, and there can be no excuse for failure to fulfill moral obligations. To be guilty is to be a traitor to our fellow men, to the State and to God.

almost every ward. Unfortunately, they are usually not the harmless type, but are aggressive, and emotionally virulent. Practices, loathsome beyond words, including sodomy and the seduction of children, are daily occurrences, laughed at and even encouraged by attendants, many of whom are themselves blatant homosexuals.

"Due to the crying need for psychiatrists [many patients go for months without seeing one], foreign doctors find a sinecure in such hospitals while making time to satisfy immigration requirements for private practice. Unable to cope even with the language, (yet) they have been given the practical power of life and death over thousands of our citizens [what a travesty of justice and humaneness].

"It is a tragic and ironic fact that some of the very poor whom our veterans fought to liberate in World War II, are now part of a vicious system oppressing the same veterans.⁴

The "Payoff," to use the language of the street:

"The letter quoted below was written in reply to a query by my mother regarding the whereabouts of VA money sent to the hospital. I'd rather have it [the letter]

⁴ This is rapidly becoming recognized by the mass, the common people, and everyone with an ear, not necessarily close to the ground, can easily hear the rumblings of a coming storm. One whose son is in such an institution, brokenheartedly remarked: "What can we poor people do? The institutions are strong; those in control have much power." She forgot the history of France and the Bastile. With unlimited authority, arms and men to fight on the one side; hunger, weakness, no armament on the other, when the people felt their suffering beyond further endurance, *they acted*. The die was cast, the Bastille fell, and with it the power and once glory of France. Men must not forget the Story of France. *History repeats itself time and again.*

than all the money in the world; for, despite the fact that I was held there against my will, was beaten, abused, and charged with paranoia—the Director of Kings Park admitted flatly that:

"'. . . YOUR SON . . . DOES NOT HAVE ANY FUNDS AT THIS HOSPITAL. HE WAS NOT ADJUSTED; HE WAS INCOMPETENT WHILE A PATIENT'."—*Emphasis ours.*

Perhaps the author who wrote: "WHOM THE GODS WOULD DESTROY THEY FIRST MAKE MAD," describes the situation; but in the meantime, humanity suffers.

Have such conditions lessened? We have just received this report:

"Under a new Ohio law any individual can go to a probate court and sign an affidavit accusing anyone of being mentally ill. Immediately the police will arrest the individual and take him to the Cleveland State Hospital where he can be held for five days. Norman Feurst, Democratic whip of the House of Representatives, is reported as saying that he will soon introduce a bill designed to protect citizens from the misuse of mental illness rulings. The War Veterans Association is also offering to help in this fight to protect the innocent people. LAST YEAR IN CUYAHOGA COUNTY ALONE (the county in which Cleveland is located) MORE THAN THREE HUNDRED SANE PEOPLE WERE THROWN INTO THE STATE HOSPITAL MENTAL ILLNESS WARD AND LATER RELEASED AFTER BEING PRONOUNCED SANE."—*Emphasis ours.*

Who will be the next victim? It may be you who read this.

To further disabuse the reader's mind that the "Snake Pit" was an isolated instance taking place several years ago and would not now happen, we suggest that he procure a copy of "Look" magazine, February 3, 1959 edition and read the article

by Roland H. Berg, Medical Editor, entitled "A Report on Hospitals," said to be based on an investigation made by the California Medical Association, and he will be convinced otherwise.

CHAPTER FOUR

Section One

*A Snake Pit of Another Type, but Just As Degrading.
Is Such a Thing As Reported Possible in a Big
City of a Civilized Country and in Charge
of Americans?*

What must be thought of the Government of a State where hundreds of thousands of dollars are paid to women who make illegitimate children a business, but fail to employ reliable help to give proper care to mothers left without support, supposedly because of lack of money.

The material quoted in this Chapter appeared in *The Chicago American*, April 25, 1958, by Leroy McHugh, under the title:

Dunning Patients' Behavior Protested

"Alarmed by an increasing wave of sex offenses¹ in the neighborhood of Chicago State Hospital, a mental hospital known as Dunning, parents in the vicinity have petitioned Gov. Stratton for help.

"Heading the list of petitioners are members of the Parent-Teachers' Association of Smyser School, 4310 N.

¹ The supposition, and the Law, has, we believe, always been to the effect that those appointed to positions of authority were held *strictly responsible*, first to the State or National Government, and secondly, to the people in their charge, or under their care. Is this no longer true? Are men permitted to remain in such position who are guilty of gross neglect to duty? The people who pay the taxes, and who are responsible to see that justice is done, should know the answer.

Melvina Ave., Mrs. Peter Kusenko, of 6346 Berteau Ave., Chairman of a P.T.A. committee looking into the situation, told THE CHICAGO AMERICAN:

"Conditions in the hospital grounds and nearby streets have become a nightmare."

"It is common to see patients, men and women, committing indecent acts on hospital grounds within plain sight of Narragansett Ave. A few months ago I saw such a sight, as did two women who were with me and my three children.²

"This took place within five feet of the sidewalk on which we were walking. When I reported to the the hospital I was told by an official: 'After all, you must remember that these are mental cases.'³

Young Girls Grabbed

"Mrs. Kusenko and other members of the P.T.A. told of their concern over cases where patients grabbed girls;⁴

² Are such occurrences today frequent in public institutions, or the environments of public institutions, possibly without the immediate reprobation of those guilty? Is the public, more especially women, and children, to be demoralized because of gross neglect? These things do take place in the undescribable slums in decadent European countries, but certainly have no place in America.

³ Enactments after enactments are passed by the various States for the *probable* care of the mentally ill. Are such Laws for the mere control, rather than supervision and care with intent to cure? This news item would seem to indicate, if not furnish proof, that there is no supervision of those whose reason has been destroyed, or who are irresponsible, possibly vicious by nature, or design.

⁴ This would indicate that not only is there lack of supervision over the inmates of the institution, but that the public, residents of the district, have no protection whatever, and

exposed themselves, or committed other offenses. She said:

"The fence along Narragansett Avenue is only five and a half feet high. It's almost an hourly occurrence to see patients climb the fence, go across the street to a liquor store, and take wine or whiskey back into the grounds of the hospital.⁵

"She said Dr. Kalman Gyasfas, superintendent of the hospital, had told a meeting of the P.T.A. board that he hoped to get rid of the fence entirely. Mrs. Kusenko said:

"We're certainly strongly opposed to that!

"The fence surrounds the hospital grounds, enclosing an area bounded by Montrose Avenue, Narragansett Avenue, Irving Park Road and Oak Park Avenue.

Woman Attacked

"Dr. Gyarfasi said the matter of removing the fence had been brought up several years ago but nothing had been done about it.

"One of the most serious complaints put before the hospital board came after a patient, Donald DeVito, entered the basement where Mrs. Ingeborg Tominaga, 32, of 5647 Windsor Avenue, was washing clothes, and attempted to rape her.⁶

though teen-agers are exposed to harm, they must rely on their own wits for safety.

⁵ This is a further indication that there is neither restriction, nor supervision of the inmates; that they are practically free to do as they please, and that the public has no safety assurance.

⁶ In incidents of this nature, are not those in charge legally responsible and, in a sense, as guilty as those who commit the crime? If not, why not? If not, then should not the State that appoints and pays them be held responsible? There are questions

"DeVito, 20, of 3437 N. Harlem Ave., was out of the hospital on a pass to spend the day at home.

"Other residents of the West Side area told of patients drinking on the grounds, shouting at passersby and committing nuisances.

Met with Officials

"The Smyser P.T.A. has had two meetings with hospital officials, said Mrs. Helen D. Landry, principal, and Mrs. Howard Anderson of 6312 Eastwood Ave., P.T.A. president.

"Attending the meeting for the hospital were Dr. Gyarfas, Dr. Harold Visotsky, psychiatrist, and Pauline Peters, chief of the hospital's social service division.

Not Enough Guards

"Dr. Gyarfas told them, according to the P.T.A. representatives, that the hospital is badly overcrowded,⁷ and not enough security guards are available⁷ for the 4,669 patients.

"He would like more guards, he said, but doesn't have enough funds⁸ allotted by the state.

that concern not only the citizens of Illinois, but *all* America. Are we not "our brother's keeper," if that brother is incapable of taking care of himself? What is the answer? If we, as citizens, do not do our best to prevent such incidents, are we not degrading ourselves to the same level as the mentally ill, and those in charge who fail in their duty? Again, what is the answer?

⁷ Who is responsible for such overcrowding? The State, and/or the people, the taxpayers who permit it? Who is at fault for the lack of necessary guards: The answer must be the same.

⁸ Why the lack of funds? If a State has sufficient funds to pay unwed women vast sums to support their illegitimate chil-

Four Criminal Cases in Hospital

"At one of the meetings, said Mrs. George Feustel, 6330 Cuyler Ave., newly-elected P.T.A. president, Dr. Gyarfas was asked why criminally insane patients are sent to Chicago State Hospital instead of the maximum security hospital at Chester.

"There are four criminal cases at Chicago State, including Bailey Stanton, 65-year-old attorney, who last year shot and killed his divorced wife and attempted to kill himself.

"He was declared insane in Criminal Court and sent to Chicago State. Stanton is in poor health and blind.

"Dr. Gyarfas told the P.T.A. members that neither he nor the welfare department had the power to prevent judges from committing criminally insane patients to Chicago State.

Unusual Procedure

"Dr. William H. Haines, director of the Criminal Court's Behavior Clinic, said it is highly unusual to send a criminally insane person to Chicago State. He recommended it in the case of Stanton because of his blindness and poor health, he said.

"Dr. Gyarfas said he is opposed to having criminal patients committed to Chicago State because 'this is a hospital, not a prison.'

dren, thereby encouraging illegitimacy, should that State not be in position to employ a sufficient number of guards in institutions for the mentally ill, including the vicious, and to protect the public? If not, then would it not be wise to curtail the payment to breeders, and use it for the much more important purpose: The protection of the ill, and the public, and at the same time save the reputation of a sovereign State?

"The parents have submitted a 30-part questionnaire to the hospital staff, covering such matters as the training of attendants, what to do if a mentally ill person is encountered, and general questions about mental illness.

"Capt. Russell Corcoran of Jefferson Park station said his men investigated complaints from residents of the neighborhood, about the hospital, but hadn't received much cooperation from the staff. The hospital is outside the city limits in an unincorporated area."

We are neither accusing anyone nor making charges. If it is an exposure of gross evils and possible neglect of duty, then the citation of dangerous conditions should arouse the public to action to correct existing evils.

CHAPTER FOUR

Section Two

The Inhumanity to Man in the Twentieth Century by Diabolic Methods Unthought of a Century Ago

Three months after the text for the first edition of THE AGE OF TREASON was ready for the press, we were startled by an article which appeared in TASK FORCES, February, 1957. We considered it of such extreme importance as a means toward awakening the American people to their imminent danger, that publication was held up to include it.

The Article, LIVING BODIES WITHOUT SOULS, is by Stephanie Williams, who prefaced her article with a Quotation from St. Matthew 10:28:

"Fear not them that kill the body, and are not able to kill the Soul, but rather fear him that can destroy both body and Soul. . . ."

WE HEARTILY AGREE WITH HER CONCLUSIONS RELATIVE TO THE DIABOLICAL OPERATION OF LOBOTOMY BUT FIND FAULT WITH THE TITLE OF HER ARTICLE. A SOUL, IF WE BELIEVE THERE IS A GOD, AND THAT THERE IS TRUTH IN SACRED LITERATURE, CANNOT BE DESTROYED. THE GREAT DANGER LIES IN THE FACT THAT THE METHOD UNDER CONSIDERATION, PRACTICED BY THE ENEMIES OF GOD AND MAN IRRESPECTIVE OF THEIR NATIONALITY, AND ADVOCATED BY THEM FOR THE DEMORALIZATION AND ANIMALIZATION OF MANKIND, WOULD DESTROY THE MIND, SO THAT THE HUMAN BEING WITH EVERY POSSIBILITY OF IMMORTALIZATION, WOULD BECOME A MORON OR ROBOT. THIS WOULD NOT DESTROY THE SOUL, BUT IT WOULD HOLD THE SOUL IN *status*

quo until death of the body relieved it. The method practiced more or less extensively in America, and now openly admitted, destroys reason, and without reason man becomes less than an animal.

Fortunately, no physician, American born, imbued with the American spirit as we knew it before 1915, with Spiritual and Humanitarian concepts, could ever be induced to perform the operation in question—lobotomy—except possibly on the criminally insane, vicious Sadist, or those guilty of rape, or suffering from moral degeneracy.

A correspondent who has given careful study of, and research to, the subject propounds the question: "WHO, WHAT PHYSICIAN, IS CAPABLE OF PASSING JUDGMENT ON WHO SHOULD UNDERGO THE DIABOLICAL, UN-HUMAN OPERATION? ADMITTEDLY, THE CRIMINALLY INSANE, THE VIOLENTLY INSANE, THE SEX DEGENERATE: THESE ONLY AFTER LONG AND CAREFUL TESTS, MIGHT BE LEGITIMATE SUBJECTS, BUT WHO IS TO PASS JUDGMENT?

Dr. William Menninger of California is reported to have made the statement at a MEDICAL CONVENTION "THAT EVERYONE IS MENTALLY ILL TO SOME DEGREE." If a prominent advocate of forced incarceration of the mentally ill, admits that ALL are more or less mentally ill, then we question: WHO IS COMPETENT TO PASS JUDGMENT ON A SO TERRIBLE THING AS THE DESTRUCTION OF ANY MAN'S REASONING POWER, MAKING OF HIM A ROBOT, OR MINUS ANIMAL, A VEGETATION?

To quote Stephanie Williams:

"The operation is so simple that an average of six minutes per lobotomy, or fifteen zombies in one and one-half hours. The most disturbing factor is that the operation is TOO EASY AND TOO FINAL. . . .

Quoting Professor Alois de Chelly, member of the *Academie Francaise* and of the Legion d'Honneur who is decidedly against the operation, who states:

"The age of psychoanalysis born with the great Charcot and developed by Freud, is dead. We are now entering the era of scalpel-therapy. For this we must thank the mercenary physicians of Hitlerism, when mass lobotomies were performed on the mentally disturbed¹ so that they could be put to SIMPLE BUT USEFUL TASKS.² Approximately 10 million *morons* were thus created by Hitler's doctors. Since the war, the medical men of Germany, France, and Italy have added another 3 MILLION to that deplorable number. The lobotomy is an essentially fascist technique, comparable to sending the social offender to a gas oven. It was worthy of Hitler; it is a disgrace to the rest of us."¹

"When the new Dictator of Russia, Georgi Malenkov, took over the job of Joseph Stalin TEMPORARILY, his first words were a promise to the Russian people. He stated:

¹ According to the concepts of Hitler and Marxists, anyone who disagrees with those in power is mentally disturbed. Unfortunately, right here in America there are many, especially in minority groups, who agree with this concept, as indicated by the vast number of such operations reported by reliable authorities. According to the views of many in high places, all *nonconformists* should be so operated, making them incapable of opposing the ideas of the men so obsessed. *Nonconformity*—disagreeing with certain individuals or groups—is becoming *Twentieth Century Witchcraft* and according to one worlders, must be dealt with the most extreme measures yet devised.

² According to *Russell*, quoting *Fichte*, the Marxists and the Communists did, and are still doing everything possible to gain power over the mass. They claim that there must be an almost universally (the selected few excepted) degeneration and destruction of the reasoning faculty of the millions, so that they, the people, can be the more easily controlled in a virtual slavery. To do so, they, (the believers in freedom) must first be declared mentally unbalanced and treated accordingly.

"There will be no more LOBOTOMIES while I am dictator of Russia,' proving lobotomy to have been a formidable weapon used by the Russians.

"For years this horrible operation on the brain has been a weapon in the hands of the dictators. Hitler used it on millions of his own subjects, but Stalin is supposed to have had over 10 million slaves turned into living zombies with this simple operation which takes only five minutes to perform. The victim is said to be irrevocably crazy afterwards.

"For those of you who do not know how this operation is performed, here is a 'blow by blow' description:

"First, the patient is strapped to an operative table. The straps must be tight and VERY STRONG. Then, electrodes are clamped to the temples of the person about to be 'lobotomized.' Next, three jolts of electricity are shot through the patient's brain—enough to start violent convulsions, which give way to an anaesthetic coma.

"Now the doctor takes his 'leucotomes' (ice-pick-like instruments) and inserts them under the patient's eyelids.

This is not the opinion of "crack-pot reformers," but the openly declared opinion, and decision, of those who have set themselves up as directors of the new regime. The problem is, that if, as declared by Dr. Menninger and his associates, *all men* are more or less mentally unbalanced, *who should be the first victims?*

Already there is grave dissension among the groups themselves as to what constitutes mental unbalance and, since "all men" are mentally unbalanced, *who can be considered as mentally normal?*

The author uses the polite term "disgrace." There is as yet no term dynamic enough to describe this diabolical and vicious practice. Recognizing the operation of an ever active *Reactionary Law*, we can suspect the operators of today will become the victims of tomorrow.

With a hammer he then drives them through the eye sockets of the skull and into the forepart of the brain. Finally with a few deft sweeping motions back and forth, the doctor severs the prefrontal lobes of the brain from the rest of it.

"Result? A 'zombie' for want of a better word.
Man's Conquest—August, 1955, pg. 72."

Mrs. Williams continues:

"There are perhaps 100,000 lobotomized people in this nation today. This startling figure is made possible by the very nature of the operation called tranzorbital lobotomy. ANY intelligent person can learn this icepick surgery and perform the operation IN FIVE MINUTES. The discomfort to the patient is negligible; he suffers only a couple of black eyes from the jarring shock of the hammer and pick. There is not even a headache afterwards. In fact he probably won't even understand what has happened to him.

"Mental health legislation³ gives the people in charge the full right to perform 'ANY TREATMENT THE HOSPITAL DEEMS NECESSARY' the first week. They do not have to get permission of a relative or friend. You are completely at their mercy. This kind of legislation has

³ There should be such legislation—refer to chapters on Mental Health Laws—but it should contain protective clauses, such as notification of the sufferer and close relatives, the family physician, and an associate, as to what course the treatment is to follow, and into what institution the patient is to be placed; the privilege of relatives and the family physician to visit the patient at stated intervals, so that there be close personal supervision, and the protection this offers the sufferer.

What is to follow is in part repetition of what has already been stated in the Chapter on Mental Health Laws, but is essential here in order to show how such diabolical operations become "legally" possible.

[according to reports], been passed in 22 States and when a few more have passed it, the entire United States will be reduced to anything the one-worlders wish.

"HOW DID THIS COME ABOUT?

"WHILE YOU SLEPT, YOUR REPRESENTATIVE IN WASHINGTON AND YOUR STATE REPRESENTATIVE SIGNED ANYTHING PUT BEFORE THEM WITHOUT READING IT IN MANY CASES. Many of them did read this legislation and SANCTIONED IT WHOLEHEARTEDLY. THEY ARE THE DEDICATED INTERNATIONALISTS WHO WILL WILLINGLY SEE THE HUMAN RACE TURNED INTO 'ZOMBIES' TO GET THEIR WAY.

"Many wealthy people feel very secure . . . they feel they are not subject to the torture of the ordinary citizen. One glance at the bills would shake their confidence, for they were written with the rich boy in mind. They give the people in the conspiracy the LEGAL RIGHT to confine ANYONE, from the richest and most powerful men in the country down to the 'littlest-angel' and take EVERYTHING HE POSSESSES AWAY without hope of his ever regaining it again. His property can be 'reduced to cash.'

"They have the right to 'cash' any checks, sign applications, affirmations, and reaffirmations for old age security and to endorse and CASH ANY CHECKS, WARRANTS, DRAFTS, AND OTHER EVIDENCES of indebtedness payable to such patients.

"His Guardian, appointed over him [who may be a 'county employee'] has the legal right to 'sell or encumber the property of the estate of such patient' . . . and from the proceeds of such sale of encumbrance or from ANY OTHER FUNDS of the estate which MAY COME INTO HIS POSSESSION, he shall pay to the county the expense incurred by it for the maintenance of such patient. . . .

"This is for treatment you DO NOT WANT, most prob-

ably DO NOT NEED, but find compulsory in many cases. The (present) California Law as an example, also stipulates: 'the judge may proceed immediately to determine the mental status of the ALLEGED mentally ill person WITH OR WITHOUT THE PRESENCE OF THE PATIENT OR HIS RELATIVES, AT THE JUDGE'S DISCRETION.'

"One may wonder, as many do, if your political viewpoint should vary with that of the judge, might it not influence him against you?

"Perhaps you will wonder if your Representatives know of this legislation. YES, THEY ALL KNOW ABOUT IT. Where were the loyal ones when it came up? ABSENT. They were all flooded with mail from their constituents. They still did not appear to fight it or even debate it. Only ONE CONGRESSMAN AND ONE SENATOR SEEMED TO HAVE THAT COURAGE. The Senator was Senator George Malone from Nevada and the Congressman was Usher Burdick, who presented a resolution which states:

" 'Whereas seven hundred thousand citizens of the United States are confined in asylums, many wrongfully and needlessly; and

" 'Whereas the majority are old people, misfits and odd ones who are not insane or dangerous, and

" 'Whereas we recognize the need of adequate care for the mentally ill but deplore legislation which may be contrary to their best interests and the language of this bill is subject to misinterpretation which could jeopardize constitutional rights of the individual, and

" 'Whereas among the psychiatrists are those who advocate an ideology FOREIGN TO THE UNITED STATES, as set forth in 'Mental Health and World Citizenship,' the statement of the 1948 International Congress on Mental Health and

" 'Whereas the mental health organizations are sponsoring the several States commitment legislation which VIOLATES the rights guaranteed to every citizen under the Constitution of the United States, and

" 'Whereas the Alaska Mental Health Act, as passed by Congress, contains UNCONSTITUTIONAL PROVISIONS:

" 'Therefore, be it

" 'RESOLVED by the House of Representatives (the Senate concurring), that the Congress of the United States make a COMPLETE INVESTIGATION INTO ALL RAMIFICATIONS AND IMPLICATIONS OF MENTAL HEALTH LEGISLATIVE PROGRAMS WHICH ARE CURRENTLY BEING PROMOTED.' (H. Res. 267)

"THE RESOLUTION WILL DIE without support. The only way it can succeed is for you, RIGHT NOW, to insist that your Representative support it. Write to him, not once but often; wire him; then call him and speak with him on the telephone.

"Word now comes from New Jersey that 166 physicians are calling upon their legislators for permission to perform 'mercy killings.'⁴

"This is the first step. In Germany they started the same way. Permission was granted for so-called 'mercy killings.' The result was the same ruthless killings that

⁴ It would be most interesting and highly illuminating to learn *the nationality* of these physicians; *where* they were born, and in *what colleges and/or universities* they received their training and degree. This might shed light on their desire to legalize so-called "mercy-killings," something God Himself would not do, demanding as it does, interference with Natural Law. Perhaps, however, these men, as a friend remarked, "are not *physicians*." Physicians are Humanitarians. These men probably do not believe in either God, or a *Divine Law*, to which they are subject, regardless of their rejection of it.

were forced on the citizens of Russia. The complete brutality of the doctors and their assistants is shown in an article from the *New England Journal of Medicine*, July 14, 1949:

"Most institutions did not have enough physicians, and what physicians there were were either too busy or did not care, and they delegated the selection to the nurses and attendants. WHOEVER LOOKED SICK OR WAS OTHERWISE A PROBLEM was put on a list and was transported TO THE KILLING CENTER. The worst thing about this business was that it produced a certain brutalization of the nursing personnel. They got to simply picking out those whom they did not like, and the doctors had so many patients that they did not even know them, and put their names on the list."

"Who were the so-called MENTALLY ILL? Since Dr. Wm. Menninger has stated to Californians recently that EVERYONE is mentally ill to some degree, you may rest assured the one-worlders are planning BIG THINGS FOR PATRIOTS.

"IF THEY SUCCEED, IT IS BECAUSE YOU DID NOT CARE ENOUGH TO PICK UP A PEN AND SUPPORT THE FEW REMAINING PATRIOTS WHO REPRESENTED US IN WASHINGTON."

The questions confronting all Americans are: Are you willing to live under the shadow of such a constant threat to your life and reason? Are you ready to subject your loved ones to these dangers? Are you so inert that you will sit idly by, and refuse to do all in your power to have legislation so worded that even the most humble and unfortunate shall have the protection of the Law? If you fail to act, the sin of omission may bring upon you, a penalty beyond your ability to realize its enormity.

Since the beginning of Hitler's time these atrocities, and

diabolical abominations, have become more and more frequent by what many have called "demons in human form," to human forms with Souls. Biblically, it is *St. John's* description of those who have become the "chaff," so unhuman is their nature that the *Divine Law* has marked them to total extinction, and certainly should have no part in the care and treatment of the unfortunate.

Apparently there is only one remedy capable of correcting this colossal and ever increasing evil of inhumanity to man, that is to replace it by a sane and sensible one, one offering no great difficulties:

Tear down the existing monstrosities known as Veterans' Hospitals and insane asylums, that are increasingly becoming "snake pits" and demoralizing centers, and in their place build medium sized units which will permit the separation of children from adults, the vicious from the docile, the degenerates from the morally clean, the apparent curable from the incurable, and place each class in these separate buildings, under the charge of physicians whose reputation and morality is beyond question; all to be supervised by local men, whose personal responsibility and capability is firmly established by their business success, who are not political stooges to selfish political activities.

Eighteen months after the above was written, seven months after the "AGE OF TREASON" was printed and the first copies distributed, medical men with long experience arrived at the same conclusion suggested by us.

In a news items published in *The South Bend Tribune*, May 14, 1958, we find an interesting suggestion under the heading:

Urges End of Large Mental Hospitals

"SAN FRANCISCO (UP)—The president of the

American Psychiatric Assn. has urged the "liquidation" of state mental hospitals.

"This recommendation came from Dr. Harry C. Solomon, superintendent of the Massachusetts Mental Health Center in Boston and former professor of psychiatry at Harvard Medical School. He spoke at the association's 114th annual meeting.

"The large mental hospital is antiquated, outmoded and rapidly becoming obsolete," Solomon said. "We can still build them, but we cannot staff them; and therefore we cannot make true hospitals of them."

Solomon said after 14 years of effort, no state hospital has an adequate staff as measured against minimum standards set by the American Psychiatric Assn.

"I do not see how any reasonably objective view of our mental hospitals today can fail to conclude that they are bankrupt beyond remedy," Solomon said.

Alternative Treatment

"I believe therefore that our large mental hospitals should be liquidated as rapidly as can be done in an orderly and progressive fashion."

"Solomon suggested several alternatives to the state hospital for acutely ill patients who respond to treatment.

"These included psychiatric units in community general hospitals; outpatient clinics; 'half-way' houses; treatment of patients for the aged and for children.

"For chronic patients, Solomon suggested they be sent to facilities planned as a sort of 'colony' or 'home,' rather than as a hospital."

It has been my good fortune, that during my fifty years in public activities both at home and in almost every part of the world, to come in close contact with what is now derisively termed the "old fashioned" physician, who loves his profession

and humanity beyond all else: Men imbued with Spiritual concepts; deeply steeped in Humanitarianism, and "dyed in the wool" Americanism, not one of whom would ever think of being guilty, or even associated, with men who would be guilty of betraying their trust as physicians. It is therefore almost beyond my comprehension that there should be in existence creatures so vicious, yet permitted to practice as physicians and psychiatrists.

As in every other profession there are snobs, incompetents, criminals, and those who are wholly selfish by nature, as for instance, the "happy" pill purveyors. Fortunately, especially among American born physicians, such are greatly in the minority.

Because of the different schools of medicine, each with its basic concepts, I have had enemies among the profession, but withal, I have found in them the American spirit of freedom of thought, and the attitude of gentlemen wholly ethical. I wholeheartedly agree they have a perfect right to believe in, and fight to uphold their own concepts. I would not respect them if they did not. I reserve the same right for myself.

Referring again to the vicious operation of Lobotomy, many American Surgeons of the highest reputation were beguiled by the swan song of foreign surgeons, of what this simple, but horrible operation, would do in the relief, or cure, of the insane, being totally uninformed of that *other*, and *sinister*, purpose for which this vicious practice was most generally employed.

After the performance of hundreds, nay, thousands, of such operations, they are finally beginning to awaken to the real facts.

In the April 1957, issue of *Reader's Digest*, beginning page 61, Paul de Kruif reports the experience of one surgeon who was led into the practice of *Lobotomy*, under the belief that insanity could be relieved, or cured, by it. The article is too

lengthy to quote in full. Only a few of the most important statements can be quoted:

"Jack [John T. Ferguson] began studying the writings of a bold and brilliant neurologist, Dr. Walter Freeman of Washington, D. C., the American pioneer of psycho-surgery. Freeman reported how a Portuguese doctor, Egas Moniz and his associates had bored holes through both sides of the skulls of insane people. With an ingenious knife, the leucotome, they cut the masses of nerve fibers that connected the frontal lobes with the thalamus.⁵ *The frontal lobes are supposed to be for thinking and the thalamus to be a powerhouse for emotions. . . . —Emphasis ours.*

"Freeman and his co-workers had slashed the brains of many hundreds of insane people. . . . Other neurosurgeons had also tried the operation, and a U. S. Public Health survey reported that there had been good results in one-third of 10,000 pre-frontal lobotomies. . . ."

"Dr. Ferguson became a fiery disciple of Freeman's. By 1954 more than 400 lobotomies had been done at Loganport Hospital. . . . Dr. Freeman had *regretfully* explained in his great book, *Psychosurgery*. The operation causes a particular nucleus of brain cells in the powerhouse of emotions, the thalamus, to *degenerate permanently*.⁶

⁵ Millions of people in India believe that the *Thalamus is the seat of the Soul*. Destroy that, or in any way interfere with it, and the Soul is destroyed. This is a basic part of their religious conviction. The Soul, i.e., Spirituality, is inseparable from reason. Without reason, there can be no consciousness of Spiritual reality.

⁶ The reader should give special attention to Dr. Freeman's final statement as quoted in the last paragraph.

⁷ If the Thalamus degenerates, or is made to degenerate, by any means, then according to one of the oldest religious

*It does bad things, too, in the front lobes of the brain that are supposed to enable you to imagine, to foresee, to think ahead.⁸ And it occasionally brought on convulsions or abusive and obscene language or uninhibited sexual drive or obnoxious mannerism or a permanent *vegetable* existence.⁹*

"Only the desperate sadness of incurable insanity¹⁰ justified gouging into sick brains. The kindly country doctor in Jack [Dr. Ferguson] *began* to hate lobotomies.¹¹

"'I guess God must have had His arms around my shoulders,' says Jack [Dr. Ferguson]."—*Emphasis ours.*

Hades Releases Another of Her Most Precious Secrets

Reader, if you have an idea that the diabolical operation known as Lobotomy, is the ultimate of vicious practices, then you are greatly mistaken. There is another development so vicious in its nature that the normal mind cannot conceive of its possibility, nevertheless, we are informed, as we write this, that

beliefs of man, the Soul is destroyed. Man becomes less than animal. Another co-worker with God has been eliminated.

⁸ But for man's imagination, men would still dwell in caves. To the imagination of man must be credited all his advancement in every phase of his existence.

⁹ As already stated, man may become less than the animal, a living, moving *vegetable*, lower than the animal in the field. Here in a simple statement, a frank admission by an accepted authority of long and great experience, that this vicious operation destroys everything that makes man a man, a personality, with the possibility to become an Individual, a Spirituality. The operation may "cure," i.e., relieve the patient of his insanity by making him a *consciousless thing*.

¹⁰ Incurable insanity, criminal insanity, or total sexual debasement, might justify the operation.

¹¹ It were well if all American surgeons with the true physician's outlook, who have practiced this diabolical operation, would awaken to its horribleness, as did Dr. Ferguson.

the instrument to be described has not only been perfected, but that it has actually been tested—no one would state where—and found to work perfectly in its intended purpose.

It is readily conceivable that the Alaskan Mental Health Bill, and the Civil Rights Legislation, though entirely separate one from the other, nevertheless tie in with this new device. One can be made to reinforce the other, and the human creature has not the slightest chance of escape.

According to reports, the *Fort Worth Star Telegram*, October 3, 1956, carried the following under a Chicago Associated Press date-line:

"An industrial scientist said Wednesday the time may come when humans may be equipped from infancy with enslaving, built-in electronic controls.

"'Then again, it may never come' said Curtis R. Schaferm, project engineer for the Norden-Ketay Corporation, Milford, Conn. But he indicated it was an interesting possibility.

"Schaferm, in a prepared speech, at the National Electronic Conference, said this electronic system, which he calls bio-control, might follow another war.¹²

"He added: This enslavement could be imposed upon the vanquished as a condition of peace,¹³ or through the threat of hydrogen bombing. Bio-control could make this enslavement complete and final, thus the controlled

¹² Why only after a great war? Once the proper legal machinery for such a purpose is set into motion, the method might be used for *any* and *every* purpose decided upon by those in control. In fact, this has already been decided, according to published reports.

¹³ If such a method can be imposed upon a people taken as prisoners, or as a condition of peace, then it certainly can be made mandatory for any other reason or purpose.

subjects would never be permitted to think as individuals.¹⁴

"A few months after birth a surgeon would equip each child with a socket mounted under the scalp, with electrodes reaching selected areas of brain tissue. . . . A year or two later, a miniature radio receiver and antenna would be plugged into the socket. . . .¹⁵

"From that time on, the child's sensory perceptions and muscular activity could be either modified or COMPLETELY CONTROLLED¹⁶ by bio-electric signals radiated from state¹⁷ controlled transmitters. . . ."

According to late reports, the vicious lobotomy operations may be replaced by a practice equally reprehensible.

A report published in THE LOS ANGELES TIMES, January 19, 1958, under the heading:

¹⁴ This is decidedly what was long foreseen by *Fichte*, boasted about by *Ana Pauker*, and described by Bertrand Russell. However, *the methods themselves, the legislation since enacted*, were not then foreseen.

¹⁵ This does not coincide with the former statement that the "vanquished"—those taken as prisoners—would be so treated. Certainly babes in arms are not "the vanquished." It is a clear indication that already in the inception of such a plan, inhuman creatures have considered well the various methods for the mental degeneration, that subjection of the race might be made more certain.

¹⁶ Here is revealed the secret for ultimate control. It is not merely a temporary, or partial control, but a *complete control*, of those judged guilty of some offense, or for any other reason.

¹⁷ No longer would local courts have jurisdiction over its citizens, but instead, a central government, and this, according to reports, is exactly what *Civil Rights Laws* were designed for.

A central Government would replace local courts in jurisdiction. The opinion is becoming general that *Civil Rights Laws* were designed to pave the way for complete control.

Atomic 'Knife' Used for Brain Surgery

"Stockholm, Jan. 18, (1958) (AP) — Swedish surgeons using an *American*-invented 'atomic knife' report they have successfully performed the first brain operation in history without opening the skull."

If such operations are for a legitimate purpose they will be a boon to humanity, but employed as lobotomy has been, they will be just another curse mankind must face squarely, fight and eliminate.

CHAPTER FIVE

"Progressive" Education as a Means to Pervert and Demoralize the Mind of Youth, Making Them Incapable of Thinking and Reasoning

The Method in Full Force in Many Schools and Colleges

"Fichte laid it down that education should aim at *destroying free will*, so that after leaving school, they shall be *incapable . . . throughout the rest of their lives . . . of thinking or acting otherwise than as their schoolmasters would have wished . . . failure is not likely to occur where there is dictatorship.*"¹ Russell—*Emphasis ours.*

"I am a Protestant. I do not hesitate to confess that I have been more or less bitterly opposed to the Catholic church and its Parochial schools, but as the father of several girls and owing to the study of what is taught in schools and colleges, and publicly, even proudly, proclaimed in public print (as herein indicated) by heads of such colleges, I can do no less, nor would my conscience permit me to do otherwise, than send my children to Catholic schools and denominational colleges." — *A correspondent.*

Canon Bernard, advisor to Episcopal students at the University of Chicago, according to an article in *American Mercury*, January, 1957, "finds that America's culture is based on the premise that 'our *animal appetites* are mighty and to be sacri-

¹ The term "dictatorship" as here used does not necessarily have reference to a one man rule, or overall regime, but to any stereotyped form made *compulsory*; nonconformity being considered as rebellion. A system of virtual dictatorship over teachers admittedly exists in schools and colleges throughout the country.

ficed UNTO² if we would enjoy a satisfactory existence;³ and the chief of all the appetites is sex'."—*Emphasis ours.*

² In all of the estimated fifty million years of man's existence on earth the moral inculcations, and efforts, were toward building a strength that would be *at least* somewhat stronger than animal's natural instinct and act. The two *main* objects of sex were: (a) Procreation; man becoming a procreator, and the co-worker with God, and woman as his assistant in *perfecting Love by reproduction*; (b) the expression of Divine Love between man and woman, perfecting this Love as they transmuted carnal, beastly [lower than animal] passion. All history, notably that of Babylon, Nineveh, Sodom-Gomorrah and Greece, proved that sex uncontrolled, demoralized, always led to the unforgettable vices as illustrated in the story of the New York "Snake Pit" and by the revelations in the public news of its votaries in our Capital City. Do parents want their daughters *brain washed* in institutions of "higher learning" so that they will actually believe this to be education and *culture*? Are their lives to be governed as indicated by Fichte, Militant Socialists, and/or the vicious enemies of man, that the white race especially if it permits itself to fall victim to the scheme, be destroyed?

³ This statement is brain washing to perfection. Who is there who does *not* want to *enjoy a satisfactory existence*? One of the aims and ends of life is to be happy. *This is possible only when there is a clear conscience; the faith and knowledge of a certainty in the future. When the foreign ideologies emphasize that there is only a physical existence; that there is no God; no such thing as Spirituality; no love unless based in sex; that nothing is really sacred is accepted, then the very foundation on which happiness and peace of mind must be based, is destroyed.*

⁴ This is the unhappy and degrading result of Freud's Psychology. Freud, consumed by the basic animal passions, could conceive of nothing as reality except that which was based on sex. In America, if reports of those with experience are to be believed, there are now innumerable Psychiatrists, foreign born and imbued with these destructive foreign ideologies, who practice and teach these ideas to their patients.

"The young people of today, growing up as they had to in the midst of an adult generation in turmoil and military service in the offing, can hardly be blamed for lack of consistent moral ideals and settled purpose."⁵
American Mercury, January, 1957.

"In 1921 the plan [more properly a plan to demoralize and degenerate the minds of youths] had developed to the stage where the Intercollegiate Society became the *League for Industrial Democracy*. Its purpose was 'edu-

American born and American Spirited practitioners are beginning to be judged in the same light by the American public.

⁵ At first thought this could be accepted as true; but throughout time there have been wars, nevertheless, the American Schools and Colleges came through without being affected, and infected, by the most degrading ideologies man could conceive. The present deplorable condition is due to the fact that there is no proper supervision over those elected, or selected, to govern, or direct Schools and Colleges. As a matter of fact, the demoralization of Schools and Colleges had its beginning with the Fabian Society in England. This Fabian Society is actually an Aristocratic Socialistic Society. Woodrow Wilson and many American intellectuals became converts and members. In America it became known as the Dewey philosophy. To comprehend the *basic* scheme, it is necessary to keep in mind what Fichte had to say about Education. In 1905 the Intercollegiate Socialistic Society was formed in New York, "*To promote an intelligent interest in socialism among college men and women.*" There was no hidden hand here. The object was plainly stated, and no truly *Christian* man or woman, much less educators who became converts, could even pretend they were misled.

All that we might say of the Dewey system of education would not cover the subject as completely as did Admiral Hyman C. Rickover when speaking before the National Press Club in Washington: "*Today, (John) Dewey is God, the National Educational Association is his prophet, and all the teachers in colleges are his disciples.*"—*Emphasis ours. Human Events*, May 27, 1959.

cation for a new social order based on production for use and not for profit.' John Dewey was made Vice President in the middle 1930's; his election shows how carefully those who direct World Revolutionary Movements play their cards. The British Fabian⁶ Society announced that 'The L.I.D. in the U.S.A. is carrying on active propaganda in the United States on similar lines to our own here' . . . using the terms 'internationalism,' 'liberalism' . . . not socialism, or communism, or capitalism . . . just 'liberalism.' Any other term would have scared many people away from the movement."

"Professor John Dewey was on the faculty of Teachers' College, Columbia University, New York. Among the *basic* principles he taught were:

1. "There are no absolute or eternal truths."⁷
2. "There is no such thing as a human Soul or an human mind in the Christian sense."⁸

⁶ It is probable that very few Americans, even among the most educated intellectuals, actually know that the Fabian Society was formed by many of England's most prominent College men, for the *express* purpose of invalidating the American Constitution, emasculating American Freedom, and bringing America, the English "Cousins," back into the British fold — the "Mother" country.

⁷ If there are no basic truths, then all religion is a delusion and a deceiver. There can be no Wisdom, even though based on experience, and Solomon was blindly misled by the one he believed to be the Lord. There being no basic truth, man cannot be truthful, and this gives him license to engage in any falsehood he pleases. Man is not *man*; ergo, he is by nature a consummate villain.

⁸ There being no Soul in man, he necessarily must be a Soulless, non-Spiritual being. However, possessing the capacity to think and reason, it is taken for granted that his reason would indicate to him the right, i.e., the constructive thing to do, since

3. "There are no fixed moral laws."⁹

A mother writes:

"I am a member of an organization that has fought for the separation of church and state, for the maintenance of the public school system, but how can I continue to do so when I am compelled to recognize the fact that many of our schools, colleges and universities are, ACCORDING TO OFFICIAL REPORTS, becoming little less than Athletic clubs, Social centers and Assignment¹⁰ places for

this would be to his own ultimate benefit. On the contrary, possessing the capacity to think and reason, he is guilty of acts and vices which no animal creature would ever commit. He has no Soul; he is Soulless, *i.e.*, Godless—there being no God. Furthermore, he is not accountable to anyone for anything he does, nor for any crime he commits, because those "wronged" have no actual rights. In the light of this philosophy, the inculcations of the British high Black Magician, Aleister Crowley, were right: "*Do what thou wilt is the whole of the law.*" One could readily believe this devil whom many worshipped, to have been the author of this philosophy.

⁹ Considering this statement, we can readily understand the conclusions arrived at by Canon Bernard and other high officials of public schools, colleges of "higher" learning, and Theological seminaries and why there are so many pregnancies among teen-aged girls. There being no fixed moral laws, it is certain every one is a law to himself, or herself, and the one Law is that *the animal appetites must be satisfied* irrespective of the results. Is there any wonder that morality is becoming a nebulous thing, and is to be given consideration only by the weak who fear the results. This is the reason why so many parents who still believe in God, morality, cleanliness of Spirit, and the *reality of love* between men and women, raise the question: Where does moral responsibility lie?

¹⁰ Are these terms too harsh? If the reader is inclined to think they are, he is referred to a statement in *The American Mercury*, January 1957. *Sex and teen-age marriage*, by Jesse C. Burt:

girls. Can I, with my Social, Christian science continue to send my children to public institutions when I read on every hand the pronouncements that there is NO TRUTH, NO MORAL LAW, AND NO GOD? My one resource is private or Parochial Schools though all my life I have been taught, and have subscribed to the theory, that these are UN-American."

We found, after making an exhaustive investigation, that in practically every school system there have been a number of pregnancies reported within recent years. In one of these cities, where the schools serve 100,000 pupils, we learned there had been 350 pregnancies within the past year.

"On the West Coast, the five Salvation Army hospitals served 1,231 *unmarried* mothers in 1953. Sixty percent of them were under 21 years of age; thirty percent of the latter were under 18 years of age."¹¹

"Dewey contended—and do not forget that the present educational system is based on his concepts:

"That morality consists of adjusting oneself to one's environments including the particular group in which one finds himself."¹²

¹¹ These things happened, and are happening all over America under the present "Progressive" school—the planned-system. Are there any words of condemnation too strong? Do parents of today who love each other and their children according to Christian standards, desire their children to be engulfed in such environments?

¹² This being accepted as the proper way of procedure, if one is placed in a certain environment and others in the same environment are homosexuals, it is accepted as being perfectly all right and against no law to become one also. The girl in school associating with others sexually precocious, encouraging desires for satisfaction, as mentioned by Canon Bernard, thinks it is perfectly all right to do so irrespective of what the results

4. "Human conduct depends upon patterns of habit and impulse."¹³

Dewey is said to have professed to be hostile to Communism, and because of this he gathered around him many anti-communists who had not the slightest knowledge of his real intentions. By 1933 it is estimated that he had more than 5,000 followers who were highly placed, all brainwashed and advocating social revolution in schools, colleges and universities. The Alumni had worked themselves into strategic positions. They marched under the banner of *the progressive educational system*, working constantly and consistently and secretly to change the *old American system of education*,—which throughout the years had prepared boys and girls for an orderly, constructive life, had produced authors, lecturers and statesmen, all of whom had made America great,—into a *new oriented system of indoctrination or brain washing* in full harmony with *Fichte's concepts*.

"On May 3, 1933, Dr. Ruff, a *specialist* in social studies, sponsored a meeting held in Teachers' College, Columbia University, of which the subject for discussion was the necessity for building a *new social order*, with the

may be, their philosophy based on the concept that there is no infraction of any moral Law. There being no God, there can be no disobedience of any Spiritual Law, as no such Law exists. Do the parents of America consent to such a concept and practice?

¹³ Every religious and Spiritual teaching has an established rule governing human conduct, which has been accepted even if not practiced by the mass, recognizing that "impulse" is the devil's agency to lead man astray. It is acknowledged as a truism, that the sensual appetite of man's carnal nature, if followed, will most certainly lead to his degradation, weakness and final extinction. History does not record anything to the contrary.

possibility and determination to use the teachers and the schools for making the scheme a success. In this manner was born the present educational—non-moral—non-Spiritual—non-Godly—system. The results are becoming more apparent every day, though there is light breaking over the horizon. The people most concerned—the parents—are awakening and powerful impetus is given the idea for the establishment of private schools under the direct jurisdiction of LOCAL Directors after the fashion of fifty years ago.”—*The Red Fog Over America*. William Guy Carr, R.C.N.—*Emphasis throughout ours.*

The concepts of Dewey were based on those of Lenin, the Bolshevik leader who taught the:

“Infamous ‘glass of water’ theory regarding sex relations. He claimed that love¹⁴ between man and woman was ‘only a physiological process,’ should be made common and trivial¹⁵ like ‘taking a drink of water.’ Shocking enough, this theory has much influence in the develop-

¹⁴ Asiatics have, in general, little or no concept of real love —*a binding affection* that can, and does, exist between two people, holier and dearer to them than life itself. A bond that is not only satisfactory to them, but in moments of marital relationship, is like a sacrament to them, something for which they would willingly, if necessary, sacrifice all they possess in order to continue the sacred bond.

¹⁵ Lenin evidently knew nothing whatever of what is known as love by those who have experienced the *divine passion*. Perhaps he had never even felt compassion and affection. What he called a “trivial” affair or indulgence, is the grossest, most carnal of all relationship between men and women, and it is men with concepts such as these who so strongly advocate inter-marriage between the colored and white race, as long as it does not directly affect *their own race which would make it strictly taboo*. Insofar as others are concerned, what does it matter, since it is only for physical satisfaction?

ment of the modern system of sex education¹⁶ in our schools, amounting to 'psychological rape' [rape of the child]."—*Emphasis ours.*

It is an incentive to *carnal relationship* when teenagers in schools are taught there is no moral obligation in sex relationship, that such indulgence is necessary to satisfactory existence. No inculcations could be lower than this; no indulgences more debasing and degrading.

The (white man's) whole Christian tradition has been based on the Biblical inculcations that sex is sacred (that infringement of the Law is the seed of death). It is not *just* a "physiological" (biological) indulgence. The protector of virtue is modesty. The Bible (the Christian's book of Law) does not teach that ignorance is the same as innocence. Far from it. The Bible teaches the facts about sex and life. However, in doing so, the Bible encourages the system of modesty, reserve, decorum, and delicacy in the relation of boys and girls, men and women.

Before the intellectuals in England and America were converted to Aristocratic Socialism, *i.e.*, Fabianism and later other foreign ideologies, the Bible was a text book in public schools. The boys and girls were taught the desirability of virtue and morality, respect for, and obedience to parents, to Law and Order, devotion to God, and that love between man and woman was next to the love for God. Morality was the rule among men; honor and morality went hand in hand; sex was given its proper place in the home and society, and the basic Laws of some of America's greatest and most powerful Fraternities included sex honor.

"The system of 'sex education'¹⁶ now in force in

¹⁶ Refer to the statement by Dewey, the "most high god" of the present school system, if this is doubted.

many American schools is directly contrary to *what the Bible teaches*.¹⁶ What is called 'brutal frankness' is employed in a deliberate effort to break down the child's innate sense of modesty and reserve. Boys and girls are taught to discuss sex relations with the same abandon and frivolity that they would talk about a baseball game, or any other type of activity.¹⁷ Consequently, from ages of five to teen-age, they begin to explore the meaning in practice.¹⁸

Here is another quotation from the article which appeared in *The American Mercury*, January, 1957.

"An epidemic of teen-age violence, combined with sex licentiousness, has always been the foul fruit of red revolutionary agitation. In his monumental study of *The Sociology of Revolution*, Dr. Pitirim A. Sorokin discusses the violence and sex degeneration¹⁹ that was encouraged

¹⁷ The discussion and the language, in and out of school, between children and children, youths and youths, is such as physicians would have blushed to use with their female patients forty years ago. Whether or not the men and women of that day were wrong, must be judged by every day behavior of the men who love their wives, and wives their husbands; *not* in the Freudian style, but with *respect*; in the manner parents who love their children, think is right, best, and assures happiness.

¹⁸ Can there be the slightest question of the *why* and *wherefore* of the gross immorality (to avoid harsher term), for the present day unholy conditions among the youths, those youths who will be the future citizens; the members of the Christian churches; the men and women at the summit of your government?

¹⁹ In all history, the decadence of the race of a country was first symptomized by sex debauchery, the manifestation of sex practices not recognized as *natural or normal*, and without the

in the Bolshevik Revolution period in Russia. Parallel to the development of sexual license, America observed a very decided manifestation of sadism and sexual perversion. Beginning with the Bolshevik's brutal violation of the woman's battalion during the days of the October revolution, cases of violation were pretty frequent . . . the increase in sexual license manifested itself in dozens of symptoms similar to the following one: 'During the October riots in Odessa, hooligans violated girls openly in the streets.' . . ."²⁰

"During the French Revolution, which [the human monster] Lenin boasted was just "a dress rehearsal" for the Russian Revolution, Madelin described "the tremendous growth of sexual sadism . . . a kind of epidemic, pulling the clothing off women on public streets. . . ."²¹

consent of the female, the incentive of request, or being normally in love. It is a moot question whether the moral character can ever return to normal after indulgence in unhallowed and debased practices.

²⁰ Terrible as were these orgies, *they were only slightly less than the frenzies* practiced by youths in the University of California, and other colleges of "higher learning" or "Progressive education" in different parts of the country to which reference will be made.

²¹ Where is the actual difference between the action of the frenzied Russian hordes—who were not really Russians as most of them had been murdered, but Asiatics—and these students who are supposedly Christian American boys, raised in Christian families. Or were they? In Christian families they should have been taught that the modesty of girls, of sex and sex practices, are second only to God in sacredness. Nevertheless, we have heard Legislators excuse these desecrators of all that should be most Holy: "Oh, it was only a boyish prank!" If so, what is desecration?

The Los Angeles Herald-Express published this Associated Press dispatch:

"Three thousand University of California students invaded at least a dozen sorority houses last night in a 'panty raiding' that turned into a near riot. Coeds were 'knocked around, assaulted, carried out in pajamas or nude,' the student newspaper *Daily Californian* said today. Some were stripped of their night clothes." *Red Revolt on the Campus*, by Dr. Dan W. Gilbert. *National Republic*, July, 1956.—Emphasis ours.

What was done to these "civilized" savages by these universities? Were they expelled as they would have been fifty years ago when schools were under the supervision of neighbor Directors? *They were not!* They are under the mis-named new, advanced modern regime. Were the girls recalled by their Christian parents after they were defiled by exposure? *They were not!* WHO THEN ACTUALLY IS TO BLAME FOR A REGIME SUCH AS NEVER HAD APPROVED EXISTENCE IN ANY NATION CALLING ITSELF CIVILIZED?

Do the parents in America really have at heart the welfare of their children, physically, mentally, educationally, emotionally and above all, SPIRITUALLY? Are parents sincere in their desire to know just what is taking place in America's educational institutions, how their children are being brain-washed into accepting foreign ideologies without giving them a thought, bringing about mental degeneration, demoralization, and unstabilization, making them automatons instead of human beings? It would be well if they studied "WE ARE LESS EDUCATED THAN 50 YEARS AGO" in *U.S. News and World Report*, November 30, 1956 issue, and *What's Happened to Our Schools?* by Miss Rosalie Gordon who made a thorough investigation, quoted here in part:

"Beginning around 1932 . . . (the) builders of the

'new social order' were seeking for the means of putting over their baneful philosophy, and there at hand, ready for the plucking, was progressive education. And when Dr. George S. Counts made that speech in Baltimore, to which we have referred, setting forth his plan for a 'co-ordinated, planned and socialized economy,' it was the Progressive Education Association which he chose as his forum. His talk was entitled: 'Dare Progressive Education be Progressive?'

"Then there began to appear in the progressive education movement all those same revolutionary souls who had been expounding the 'new social order'—Counts, Rugg, Kilpatrick, Bode, Hartmann, Theodore Brameld, Goodwin Watson and others. And they did with progressive education exactly—and concurrently—what they did with the 'new social order'.

"The National Education Association and its NEA Journal went whole hog for the new system and began to beat the teachers of America over the head with its glories. The teachers' colleges began to inculcate in their embryo teachers the methods and substance of progressivism, along with the 'new social order'.

"The movement issued an education magazine called *Social Frontier* (which later became *Frontiers of Democracy*) edited by Dr. Counts. It numbered among its directors 60 or more American educators and it proceeded to fill the minds of American teachers in issue after issue with the need for putting over 'the new social order' through progressive education. While the movement often managed to obscure its real purpose in the educationists' cloudy verbiage borrowed from bureaucracy's gobbledegook, some of the 'new thinkers'—no doubt giddy from the amazing success their campaign was having—began to speak out openly and frankly. For instance, Dr. Bode,

in *Social Frontier*, actually said that no matter how cleverly their proposals might be stated they must not be permitted to obscure the fact that this proposed scheme of education is deliberately aimed at fostering a disposition which will make the pupil intolerant and 'sore' with respect to the contrast between employers and workers.

"Dr. Counts himself revealed the true purpose of progressive education. He said:

"'In the collectivist society now emerging the school should be regarded, not as an agency for lifting gifted individuals out of the class into which they were born and of elevating them into favored positions where they may exploit their less-favored fellows,²² but rather as an agency for the abolition of all artificial social distinctions and of organizing the energies of the nation for the promotion of the general welfare. . . .²³ Throughout the school

²² After such manner the plan for mental debasement had its beginning. Individuals such as our early statesmen, authors, diplomats and nation builders, because they *were* gifted and engaged in *constructive efforts, making America great*, began to be classified as freaks of nature, and were not to be emulated. Perversion, dishonor and treason replaced all that these great men stood for; lowering in all too many instances, the former high standards to the level of the least civilized, often comparable to the reported Port Elizabeth and East London mob who attacked Dr. Elsie Quinlan, known as "Sister Aidan," who had long served them, hacked her to death, and afterwards devoured her. In a One-World, none except those governing may be of a higher order than these—*Brethren*.

Mothers must not under any circumstances tell their sons they might be President some day. There must be no incentive toward Master Mindedness which would raise mankind in every direction, and do so by example. *In this one* inculcation by Dr. Counts, is the germ of the leveling down of the peoples for the purpose of mass control.

²³ Individual ability must be destroyed, because this would

program the development of the social rather than the egotistic²⁴ impulses should be stressed; and the motive of personal aggrandizement should be sub-ordinated to social ends. In promotion practices, in school activities, in the relations of pupils and teachers and administrators, the ideal of a cooperative commonwealth should prevail. . . . All of this applies quite as strictly to the nursery,²⁵ the kindergarten, and the elementary school²⁵ as to the secondary school,²⁵ the college,²⁵ and the university.²⁵

"Dr. Counts then set the tone for putting over the twin evils of 'the new social order' and progressive education. He said:

naturally create pride in achievement, and raise the individual to distinction, thus creating envy in the drones and decadents. *This must not be.* To be of the common herd is to be the rule. Admittedly, *artificial* social distinctions are not desirable, *but distinction as a result of achievement, is the only thing that raises man above the herd as an example for others to follow, so that they also may be raised up.* In this manner America became the master nation of the world.

²⁴ One form of egotism is faith, or confidence in oneself. *Without* this, no achievement worthwhile is possible. Faith, self-confidence, is the *beacon light* that has led men to success, and *in their success, has led others onward, forward and upward.*

²⁵ These degenerating principles and practices must be started by the mother in the nursery. If she refuses to disbelieve that her daughter is destined to be a noble mother, or her son an inventor or great leader, an exemplar to other men, then the time will come when her offspring will be taken from her at birth, and its brain compressed and moulded as the Chinese once did their women's feet. This is the form of education visioned by Fichte for future generations, assuring distortion of the human mind as completely as did the binding of the feet of Chinese infant girls accomplish hopeless crippling. The mother then will not have any reason to dream aspiringly for the child to which she gave birth. She will, if normal, be just a heart-broken "breeder."

"If progressive education is to be genuinely progressive, it must emancipate itself from the influence [of the upper middle classes],²⁶ face squarely and courageously every social issue, come to grips with life in all of its stark reality, establish a theory of social welfare. . . .

"You will say, no doubt, that I am flirting with the idea of indoctrination. And my answer is again in the affirmative, or, at least, I should say that the word does not frighten me."

"And indoctrinate they did. This small handful of almost unknown men and women—banking on the average American's ignorance of European revolutionary methods, and on his tendency to leave teaching to the teachers—proceeded to turn the public school system of America upside down.

"One of the most important bastions that had to be stormed with the new progressivism was our traditional teaching of American and European history, geography, and government or civics. These hooded socialist educators realized it would be very difficult to get youngsters, well-grounded in American history and its heroes, in the theory and practice of American government, and a knowledge of the physical characteristics of our own and other countries, to swallow their planned society.

"Besides socialists—whether open, secret or hooded—have great contempt for what they sneeringly call

²⁶This is another of the ideals to be attained by modern, "progressive" (retrogressive) education. The influence of the upper middle class, the class that produced the Edisons, Fords and others who worked silently, steadily and earnestly for the true progress of mankind, must be replaced by an ordered, robotic, slave class. This middle class that has been the bulwark of social advancement in America, must be thoroughly liquidated.

'nationalism,' by which they mean patriotism. They want to bring their planned society not only to America but to every country in the world and then unite them all in a beautiful world socialist government. Therefore, children must be made world-minded.' They must be taught *not* to think in terms of their own country, but of the whole world as one country.

"The socialist planners in the educational world accomplished both purposes—keeping American children ignorant of their own history and traditions, and making them 'world-minded'—at one fell swoop, through the textbooks used in the progressive system. American history, geography and government were lumped all under one subject called 'social studies' and expanded to cover the world. In the New York City schools, for instance, where a modified form of the progressive system has been in operation for some years, a child gets to junior high school, and even high school, without ever having a course in American history.

"Instead he has 'social studies' which begin with a smattering of European history all mixed up with present-day living and political conditions, and a bare outline of the location of the countries; leaps the Atlantic for a further smattering of the same with regard to America; makes another leap of the Pacific for still more of the same, concerning Asia."

Fortunately, the light is breaking through. Even among educators, there are those who are becoming aware of the utter failure and intellect destroying methods of "Progressive" education. Admiral Rickover, already quoted, is one of these.

"Right from the home-grounds of the progressivist-social planners comes another. The Dean of Columbia University's Law School says that few of their entering

students (who have actually completed a college course) possess sufficient knowledge of reading, writing and history to warrant the study of law.

"A professor in a midwestern college gave a history test to entering freshmen from the high schools. Many couldn't say when America came into being. Others didn't know the dates of the Civil War or World War I. A good batch of them couldn't name one important historical figure in American life.

"The chairman of the board of examiners of Chicago's public schools declared that deficiencies in reading comprehension and arithmetic are two of the most glaring weaknesses of young people seeking jobs as teachers.

"More than half the students who entered high school in New York City in 1955 could not read at the normal level for freshman high school students. Some were as much as six years under their grade level. The percentage was even higher among those entering junior high schools.

"Complaints are rampant among personnel directors of business and industry that prospective employees coming to them from the high schools—and even from the colleges—can't read, don't know how to spell the simplest words, can't add up a single column of figures and, what is worse than all this, don't seem to be particularly concerned about it. Why should they be? Their textbooks and their social-thinking teachers have taught them that they needn't bother—the great, fatherly government will take care of everything.

"Still another aspect of the results of progressive education can be found in what has become a nationwide problem—juvenile delinquency. We have only to glance at the headlines in our daily newspapers to note

an ever increasing wave of vandalism, gang riots, robberies, muggings and killings among teen-agers.²⁷

"Of course, there are numerous explanations for our wave upon wave of juvenile crime, but many authorities who have given much time and thought to a study of the problem are agreed that progressive education is at least one of the factors involved. Children filled with revolt against organized authority, taught to sneer at established institutions, left to 'learn' according to their own bend, led to believe that 'something for nothing' is the nature of life, can very soon become compliant followers of the few lawless souls—*juvenile* or adult—to be found in any organized society."

The momentum is rapidly growing for the establishment of private schools where, as in the days of fifty years ago, the Directors will be men and women of the community, removable on a moment's notice if their actions indicate less than honorable intent. The teachers of such schools are selected by the Directors and parents working harmoniously with the teachers. The old system of punishment for infractions would be restored, and whole-heartedly endorsed by the parents.

One of the first and most important things to be accomplished in freeing the American mass mind from the shackles

²⁷ It had been planned to add a Chapter on the undescribable conditions in the New York schools. However, the daily newspapers did condescend to print what might be called a "mere outline" of horribleness of what has, and is, taking place —things unknown in past history. Perhaps, it is with the New York newspapers as with us. They cannot find words in any language to actually describe what is taking place in the New York schools. To be just, "Progressive" education is only one of the *basic causes*; *Enforced Desegregation*, and Civil Rights Legislation, are perhaps the greater incentives to criminal activities by our youths.

already forged around it, is to destroy the dangerous debased sex ideas of Freud, which form a foundation of the American school system and practices of psychiatrists steeped in decadent European ideas, both in schools and in hospitals. As Guidert states with profound truth:

"Sigmund Freud was discredited as a quack in his native Vienna. But, for a generation, his twisted theories have cast a sickening blight over many college text books in America. Freud saw sex in everything (sex not of the highest type governed his every thought). Like the founders of progressive education, he warned against 'repressing' or 'inhibiting' the 'free expression of sex activity.' Neurosis and even insanity were supposed to result from exercising self-control in matters of sex."

It is not to be suggested for an instant that all schools or all educational institutions are under the blight of "progressive" education and sex ills. There are many schools presided over by American minded, and spirited Principals and Directors, who are doing all in their power to devise means and measures for proper and full education, and for instilling Moral, Spiritual principles of thought and behavior.

"America once upon a time could boast that it had a public educational system on a par with any in the world. It was—and still is—a free system; that is, it is supported by all the people [though they have lost control of it]. And in the true American tradition it was a locally-run system—a system supported, controlled and administered by men living and respected in the community where the school was located, so that no tyrant, no central all-powerful government, no benevolent(?) ideologie could tell them what to teach, or what not to teach, or could say, with Lenin: 'Give us the child for eight years and it will be a Bolshevik forever'."—*Gordon.*

Comparisons are said to be odious. Perhaps they are, but nothing is as potent to expose the undesirable, and to paint a proper picture of the real and permanent. To properly impress the reader what has been said must be repeated time and again.

Fifty years ago America had a real public school system. There were local Directors for the school, appointed by the local taxpayers. The teacher was selected by the Director, and approved by the parents. The teacher had full authority by the Board of Directors, and the consent of the parents, to punish as much, and as frequently, as he thought necessary. Often the parents punished the child a second time at home, for an infringement at school.

The children were IMBUED WITH THE DESIRABILITY, THE ABSOLUTE NEED, OF AN EDUCATION AND WITH THE NECESSITY OF OBEDIENCE AND RESPECT. This inculcation being firmly established in the minds of the pupils they were willing to walk to school, oftentimes from one to eight miles, come snow or high water.

In the school the writer attended, discipline was very severe. There was no fear of depression or inhibition, a modern delusive term for lack of mental cleanliness and control. Nevertheless, despite the severity of the discipline, out of the forty or more students, none ever became a neurotic or a juvenile delinquent, and every one was self-supporting in after life, none ever asking for public assistance.

Considering the educational system then general throughout the United States, the cost of maintaining the schools, and the number of students, there emerged ninety percent who were competent in writing, spelling, grammar and other essential learning. From among this ninety percent, more than five per cent emerged as Statesmen, noted writers, competent leaders, solid business men, inventors and organizers. In other words, out of one hundred students of that day, five became out-

standing, while today, not one in a thousand can be so considered.

The comparison of results attained today with those of the earlier day would be so startling as to be shocking and unbelievable. This estimate is based on what leading men in large institutions are gradually beginning to recognize.

Whose fault is it? There is but one answer: **THE PARENTS**, because they accept everything for granted. "LET GEORGE DO IT," and certainly George does it—to the parents' everlasting shame and detriment, not to mention sorrow—or the destruction of initiative in their children.

CHAPTER FIVE

Section One

The Disgrace of Norfolk By William Stephenson

"Norfolk, Va. — Parents of children attending public schools in Norfolk, Va., ought to be thankful that the majority of public school pupils don't want to set up a cocktail lounge in the school, or have narcotic sessions to go along with their lessons. There is every indication that they would be allowed to do either or both, if demand warranted it."

"As it is, they are currently satisfied with a little orgiastic¹ music—enjoyed each morning before classes in several Norfolk high schools. The full story was recently reported in Norfolk newspapers.

"It seems that each schoolday morning at 8:30 A.M. Norfolk teenagers have 'rock 'n roll' sessions in the public school gymnasiums. The pupils come to school early and hold their 'dances' in the gym, with music supplied by records played by fellow students.

"One teacher commented: 'This way they get it out of their system in the early morning and they are ready for classes. It seems to be working out very well.'²

¹ In many instances resulting in Onanism—Self-pollution, defilement of body, mind and Soul, irrespective of the manner of indulgence. Severely condemned by God, the Bible and the Divine Law.

² If a future existence is certain for the Soul, and the writer firmly believes it is, then the teachers of former days must be, according to an old saying, "turning in their graves," at even the

"What a comment on America, American parenthood, American youth and Virginia public education this is!

"Just what kind of children is Norfolk educating, that they have to get it out of their system at 8:00 A.M., in order to sit through classes?

"We accuse the Norfolk public schools of pandering to the lowest element in each student's make-up. The Norfolk public schools are recognizing the vilest possible aspect of carnal nature—and encouraging it. Anyone who has ever studied 'rock' knows that this is merely a realistic view.

"'Rock 'n roll' is a direct outgrowth of the jungle 'sex' music of Africa, and its chief practitioners are the slightly modernized descendants of the original natives, whose lusts were undisguised and naked.

"And, in fact, 'rock 'n roll' is even more unhealthy than the orgy music from which it sprang, because it is a vicarious means of expression.³ To convince yourself of this, just watch some 'rock 'n roll' dancing. The suggestive

suggestion that such things are necessary to get the pupils in the "mood" to study. In those days the moral teachings of the home, and the desire instilled in the offspring to "become somebody" gave children the proper attitude for study. If this failed in some instances, the teacher had a certain method to correct it; one that always worked, and left the mental, nervous system in a normal, healthy state; *never* building the foundation for neurosis in one form or another.

³ Sacred literature is replete with teachings on the degrading and debasing results of this type of "expression" by other than normal indulgences. Medical literature deals extensively with the results from the mental, physical, and non-religious standpoint. This debasing means of release, or relief, which should be called an "irreplaceable loss of physical, mental, Spiritual energy," is degrading, to say the least. It is far more destructive

motions and contortions are thinly camouflaged imitation of actions that are sensual in the extreme.

"Such behavior is not fit for any clean-minded boy or girl to participate in or to see. And the public schools of Norfolk are providing children entrusted to them with an opportunity for both."

The statement made by the writer of the already quoted letter that Public Schools were, or were becoming social and athletic places where appointments were made for immoral purposes, may have appeared too strong, but in giving study to the Virginia episode, it really was not strong enough to arouse the parents of girls, to the great need of watchfulness and protection of their daughters.

Although a Yankee, born and raised in a Northern state, there is no forgetting the dream of our youth, of the visions and ideals formed in mind when studying history of the Virginians; of Virginia's Aristocrats, gentlemen of the South, to whom men of the colder North could not compare in their culture, or jealous consideration of their noble ladies, and their daughters.

In our visions, their manhood and honor were of the high-

in its effects on the central, emotional nervous system, and in turn, on the mental faculties than is generally believed.

Modern "rock 'n roll" as practiced in America among a so-called civilized, Christian people, with little or no condemnation from the pulpit, whose duty it is to denounce with positiveness, practices so vulgar and debasing that they put to shame the lascivious dances of the hinterland Voodoo worshippers of Haiti, supposedly the most degrading physical gyratics in which the human creature can indulge. These practices destroy Spiritual consciousness in the white race, because they are artificial and degrading to the race, while they are as native to the Negro in general as is Classical music and the Opera to the white race. How long, oh Lord, before American parents will awaken to the dangers to which their loved ones are exposed?

est character; they would rather have died than permit one of their wives or daughters to be degraded or disgraced. In these late years of life it is difficult to conceive the possibility of the fall from their former high estate, to a degree where they would permit their daughters to attend places where it would be possible to indulge in practices of so low a nature; practices which by the reaction they have on the central nervous system, destroy moral character, and resistance opening the way to mental and physical degeneration. It is inconceivable that the once mighty could possibly fall to so low an estate.

During the past two years of our investigation, those in any manner connected with education, whether as teachers or parents, who consulted us by letter or in interviews, and who were familiar with the program so plainly stated by Fichte and others, gave voice to nothing but despair.

Encouragingly, this is gradually changing; both teachers and interested parents are beginning to see the light, and are becoming ever more conscious of how thoroughly they were duped and "brain-washed" by Dewey and his cohorts. Many of the teachers are, on their own accord and responsibility, returning to the old fashioned way of teaching and control.

One of these, a public school teacher, who had met with some bitter experiences with the foreign ideology so strongly recommending children be permitted to follow their own inclinations without interference, and who has been a student of psychology for years, sums this up in a few words THAT CONTAIN THE KEY TO BOTH PROPER GUIDANCE AND ONE OF THE BASIC CAUSES FOR JUVENILE DELINQUENCY.

"... I have accepted the old adage that to 'Spare the rod, is to spoil the child.' My class has now developed a healthy respect for my 18 inch ruler. *I really believe they prefer THAT METHOD OF DISCIPLINE.*"

In her next sentence she offers an additional key to child

delinquency, and THE PSYCHOLOGICAL LAW UNDERLYING THE NORMAL, NATURAL TRAINING OF CHILDHOOD WHICH IN EARLIER YEARS WAS NORMALLY AND UNCONSCIOUSLY FOLLOWED, FIRST BY PARENTS, AND THEN BY TEACHERS. HENCE CHILDHOOD DELINQUENCY, AND YOUTHFUL CRIME, WERE PRACTICALLY UNKNOWN; THE MIND OF THE CHILD HAVING BEEN TURNED INTO NORMAL, NATURAL, HEALTHY CHANNELS.

"When a child disobeys, and doesn't receive punishment, he {or she} feels something is wrong, and develops a sense of insecurity."

In that one sentence is, Biblically speaking, "all the laws and the prophets." It is plain, common sense. *In it is contained the reason for the child's feeling of insecurity . . . there is something basically wrong or missing.* The youth feels this even more deeply, and in his search for the reality he unconsciously feels its absence, but cannot define or describe it. *He unconsciously begins to place the blame on his parents, with loss of respect and confidence in them, then in the school, the church, government, humanity and even God, leading him into the "drug" known as crime, just as the drug addict indulges in narcotics to neutralize a craving that consumes him.*

"I often tell them it is better to pay at once for their misconduct, than pay later with interest."—Emphasis ours.

What a constructive concept to build into the consciousness of the child to govern its outlook and actions in the future, and to help develop manhood or womanhood, self reliance, personal responsibility, and loyalty as a citizen.

The Spirit of Americanism

Personally, I have an idea that if I were not so eager to obey the Laws of our great country I would make every effort

to avoid paying school taxes, unless the oath taken and statement made by Thomas Jefferson at his Presidential Inauguration were made a part of the Public School Curriculum.

Although we have helped many young people through college, and hope as a body, we can help many more, I would not now agree to help any applicant for college unless such college made Jefferson's pledge and statement a basic part of its curriculum. I speak only for myself, and as a descendant of the family of one who had the honor of signing both the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution:

"I have sworn upon the altar of God eternal hostility against every form of tyranny over the mind of man."

"Called upon to undertake the duties of the first executive office of our country, I avail myself of the presence of that portion of my fellow-citizens here assembled, to express my grateful thanks for the favor with which they have been pleased to confer upon me, to declare a sincere consciousness that the task is above my talents, and that I approach it with those *anxious* and *awful* presentiments which the greatness of the charge and the weakness of my own powers so justly inspire.

"A rising nation spread over a wide and fruitful land, traversing all the seas with the rich productions of their industry, engaged in commerce *with nations who feel power and forget right*, advancing rapidly to destinies beyond the reach of mortal eye; when I contemplate these transcendent objects, and see the honor, the happiness, and the hopes of this beloved country committed to the issue and the auspices of this day, I shrink from the contemplation, and humble myself before the magnitude of the undertaking. . . .

"About to enter, fellow citizens, on the exercises of duties which comprehend everything dear and valuable to

you, it is proper you should understand what I deem essential principle of this government, and consequently those which ought to shape its administration. I will compress them in the narrowest compass they will bear, stating the general principle, but not all its limitations.

"Equal and exact justice to all men of whatever state or persuasion, religious or political; commerce and honest friendship with all nations, entangling alliances with none; the support of the state governments in all their rights, as the most competent administrations for our domestic concerns, and the surest bulwarks against anti-republican tendencies; the preservation of the general government in its whole constitutional vigor, as the sheet anchor of our peace at home and safety abroad; a jealous care of the right election by the people; a mild and safe corrective of abuses which are loosed by the sword of revolution, where peaceable remedies are unprovided; absolute acquiescence in the decisions of the majority, the vital principal of republics, from which there is no appeal. . . ."

"A well-disciplined militia, our best reliance in peace, and for the first moments of war, till regulars may relieve them; the supremacy of the civil over the military authority—economy in the public expense, that labor may be lightly burdened; the honest payments of our debts, and sacred preservation of the public faith; encouragement of agriculture, and of commerce as its handmaid; the diffusion of information and arraignment of all abuse at the bar of public reason; freedom of press and freedom of person, under the protection of the habeas corpus; and trial by juries impartially selected. These principles form the bright constellation which has gone before us, and guided our steps through an age of revolution and reformation."

"The wisdom of our sages and blood of our heroes

have been devoted to their attainment; they should be the creed of our political faith; the text of civic instruction; the touchstone by which to try the services of those we trust; and should we deviate from them in moments of error or alarm, let us hasten to retrace our steps and to regain the road which alone leads to peace, liberty, and safety.

"I proceed then fellow citizens, to the post which you have assigned me, with experience enough in subordinate stations to know the difficulties of this, the greatest of all. I have learned to expect that it will rarely fall to the lot of imperfect man to retire from this station with the reputation and the favor which bring him into it.

"Without pretensions to that high confidence you reposed in our first and greatest revolutionary character, whose preeminent services had entitled him to the first place in his country's love, and had destined for him the fairest page in the volume of faithful history, I ask so much confidence only as may give firmness and effect to the legal administration of your affairs. Relying then on the patronage of your good-will, I advance with obedience to the work, ready to retire from it whenever you become sensible how much better choice it is in your power to make."—*Emphasis ours.*

CHAPTER FIVE

Section Two

Morality in School at Its Lowest Ebb — The Sacrifice of Teen-aged Girls to the “Progressive” School System

The National Police Gazette undertook an investigation, and what is to follow, *more* than confirms what was stated in the Chapter on Education, in the 1957 edition of **THE AGE OF TREASON** and included in the present volume:

The Scandal School Boards Hush Up or Hide 100,000 Unwed School Girl Mothers

"Behind the bare statistics lies a shocking story of heartbreak and broken loves.

"The schoolrooms of America have become love nests¹ where young girls are lured² to sin. Statistics that will shock parents³ show that during the year 1957, there

¹ This term as used is *wholly* wrong. There is no such thing as love—heart affection—involved. It is purely the satisfaction of an *animal urge*. If love were actually the basis of the act, there might be condolence for it, because then at least one *Divine Law* would be fulfilled. The to-be child would have love's benefits and blessings. In carnal passion this is entirely missing.

² This term also is not applicable. It is doubtful if one in fifty of these girls who "fall" are actually "lured" into the act which will so seriously affect their future as well as the race. In general, it is a purely momentarily, voluntary act.

³ Except those parents whose daughter is unfortunate enough to become the victim. These parents must in great part blame *themselves* for neglecting their duty, in not selecting schools and colleges with strict student supervision.

These reports have not been generally made public so

were 100,000 schoolgirl mothers with illegitimate babies—the highest number ever recorded. Another 400,000 unwed schoolgirls became pregnant, although their babies were never born.

"These shocking facts have been given as evidence to the Senate Committee on Juvenile Delinquency. . . .

"Educational authorities have thrown a cloak of secrecy around the alarming scandal of love⁴ in the classroom, but the *Police Gazette* has obtained the facts and now reveals exclusively the documented evidence of a nationwide investigation.

"A spokesman for the Senate Committee in Washington had this to say:

" 'The number of pregnancies in schools has multiplied alarmingly. Health clinics report an increase of 1,000 per cent in pregnancies among junior school girls since 1949. The rate of increase has been most rapid during the past three years.'

Official Causes for Much of This Immorality

"Federally financed Social Security provides dependents' allowance to unwed mothers.⁵ This program supervised by States, which set their own standards for the distribution of Federal funds. California, for instance,

that parents of America might begin to take the necessary steps to correct this growing and morality-Spirituality destroying evil.

⁴ This is "soft-pedalling" the actual truth. As already stated, the use of the term "love" more or less *sanctifies* these acts. When there is no love involved, it is an expression of purely animal passion, formerly called by its correct name—lust. Biblically—the lust of the flesh.

⁵ It is indicated that unscrupulous Social Workers in many parts of the country have taken advantage of this opportunity to profit personally in one manner or another.

gives an unwed mother \$111.00 a month, for the maintenance of her child. Delaware allows \$75.00. Other States vary from no allowance at all up to \$100.00 a month.

"Germann Jorgensen, North Dakota social worker, revealed how these allowances, which are intended to relieve hardship, are sometimes grossly misused and even tempt girls into unwed motherhood. He made this startling statement:

"'Some mothers actually encourage their daughters to have illegitimate babies so that they can collect the Social Security money.'

"'We found in one instance, where 16 mothers were receiving dependents' aid, that they had between them 25 daughters who had given birth to a total of 39 illegitimate children. Full dependents aid was being claimed for all the babies.'

"The files of the Senate Committee contain many examples of unwed schoolgirl mothers who have made a 'career' of having illegitimate children. This case is typical:

"'One patient who was first seen in 1948 as a frail, undernourished female early in her first pregnancy now is the mother of six living children, with several men involved. She is now living alone with these small children and is being given support by the Department of Welfare.'

"'She readily admits the more children she has, the more income she expects to receive from this source and does not anticipate changing her pattern of life. (The present ceiling for dependents' allowance is \$200.00 a month.)'

"This promiscuous and calculated exploitation of motherhood should horrify responsible parents. But they cannot shut their eyes to the insidious menace to young girls that our schools are harboring.

An Interesting Case

"In Los Angeles, one unwed schoolgirl mother tearfully told a welfare worker:

"We had a party and we were necking. We had it at a girl friend's house when her parents went out for the evening. There was liquor and for kicks we all had a drink. We started smooching and before I actually realized what was happening we went too far.

"I liked the boy and after that everytime we got together we would sneak away by ourselves. . . ."

Responsibilities

"More light is thrown upon the amoral activities of the males responsible for the problem of unwed schoolgirl mothers in this extract from a Senate investigator's report:

"In some of the schools the male teenager is responsible, while in others there seems to be a definite pattern of young adults, 20 to 30 years of age and even older, who are responsible. Some teen-age males have confessed to fathering two to eight children.

"In many cases stepfathers and common-law husbands are responsible, and, in others, married men have been named."

"Fewer than 3 per cent of all schoolgirl mothers became legally married to the fathers of their unborn child.

"Despite the large number of illegitimate births recorded, the figures conceal rather than expose the widespread sexual promiscuity and resultant pregnancies in American schools. In families where a pregnant schoolgirl would bring social disgrace, parents take steps to cover up the scandal.

"In a number of instances, junior mothers have re-

turned to the clinic within 3 or 4 months with no signs of pregnancy,' reports Dr. Pate in his survey of illegitimacy. 'It can only be concluded that an abortion has occurred.⁶ This, too, presents a very serious and alarming medical problem. This situation has been increasing in the last few months."

"There are various ways in which unwed schoolgirl mothers can lose their unborn babies without resorting to an illegal operation." Sometimes a legal operation is performed in which the baby is lost. Such pregnancies are never recorded in the official statistics for unwed mothers.

"Another factor that conceals the true figures for unwed schoolgirl mothers is the fact that pupils may leave school when they are 16, without having to give an official excuse.

A Growing Problem

"Many girls who discontinue school on their 16th birthday do so because they are pregnant. But no record is made of the pregnancy.

"These facts have exposed for the first time the terrible truth about teen-age sex activities in America's schools. No parent can fail to be shocked. Some may feel the need to exercise stricter control over their children in the future.

⁶ These criminal operations inflict an incurable *moral cancer* upon those who undergo them. The number of such operations as estimated, indicates that there must be thousands of physicians engaged in this practice, though it is certain that many of these operations are performed by non-professionals; by men and women who have long made these operations their business. Chemical abortions must also be considered as body and Soul destroying practices to terminate undesired pregnancies. In many circles the young people know what to buy at any drug store for the purpose.

"An unwed schoolgirl mother and her illegitimate baby can be the beginning of two ruined lives, the start of a long road of tragedy and suffering."

Cause and Cure

The beginning of this disease, for such it is, dates back to the time when American parents accepted the foreign ideology that children should be permitted free expression in any way they saw fit. If a child wanted to tear a live bird to pieces, fine! It was an expression of its personality. If it wanted to pull the hair of another child, fine! Just another expression of personality.

To interfere, was to cause a repression, bring about a neurosis. "The spare the rod" ancient remedy was disregarded. Parents forgot that however sweet a child may be, up to a certain point, it is an animal. It can learn only by example as it does walking and talking, and must be GUIDED, DIRECTED, CONTROLLED; PUNISHED FOR INFRACTIONS OF GOOD BEHAVIOR; REWARDED FOR OBEDIENCE AND WELL DOING.

The result was naturally that the child, ungoverned, lost all respect for its parents. It became *confirmed* in its disobedience and entered school with that state of mind. The parents' lack of control and guidance plus no exercise of demanded obedience now reached the school. Just as parents had been brainwashed into the false idea of non-interference, they demanded that the teacher follow the same rule. As respect for the parents, obedience and observance of laws of behavior had been lost, so was it further eliminated for the preceptor in the preliminary hall of learning. The primary student had become a lawless, disorderly, disrespectful creature, scorning all direction, no longer believing in God or Spiritual things.

In giving up the direction and control of children in the home, parents likewise discontinued their supervision of the schools. At this point the Dewey "Progressive" school plan came into operation and soon had control of education, a super-

vision they used to the limit to teach their Godless, immoral,
DO AS THOU WILT LAW. *The result:* we see it in operation.

Man's memory is short. Man has forgotten the "little red school" house and its success. At that period, as already stated, the Bible was, in many instances, the text book from which children were taught.—The first lesson was to instill a reverence to God and obedience to His Will. Respect for, and obedience to parents and teachers were taught to be parts of that Divine Will.

In this way a wholesome respect, of obedience to law and order had been thoroughly instilled. Punishment followed quickly for disobedience in home and school. The parents gave full authority to the teacher to punish as she or he thought necessary. It bears repeating that if a child were punished in school for a wrong doing, he frequently was punished a second time when he came home from school. THERE WERE NO NEUROTICS AS A RESULT OF PUNISHMENT; instead, God fearing men and women; successful business men; world famed authors, and statesmen were developed by these methods.

To eliminate the great evil, parents must again exercise their responsibility and authority. They must again give the teacher the right to mete out any punishment indicated. They must root out every vestige of "Progressive" education and eliminate all educators(?) who teach that there is no Moral law, no personal responsibility. They must again take over supervision of the schools and colleges they support and to which they send their children.

Boiled down, the great evil had its beginning in the home and its cure must likewise have its beginning in the home. It is the responsibility of parents in a true American culture to see to it that this evil is corrected. They are equally guilty with the children for every infraction or infringement of law and order.

CHAPTER FIVE

Section Three

The Encouragement of Illegitimacy — Is This Treason or Merely a Racket for Which Frugal, Hard-Working Taxpayers are Made to Suffer?

Immorality is sin, a blot on womanhood, whether committed by members of the white, or colored races; by Christian, Atheist or Jew. There can be no distinction. Whoever is responsible for making the giving birth of illegitimate children a lucrative business, cannot be too strongly condemned and should be made outcasts together with all who live immoral lives.

No mention will be made of color or race, BUT IT SEEMS CERTAIN THAT MEMBERS OF THE WHITE RACE ARE MORE GUILTY IN THE COMMITMENT OF IMMORAL ACTS, THAN MEMBERS OF OTHER RACES, BECAUSE THE WHITE RACE HAS HAD GREATER OPPORTUNITIES TO ELEVATE THEMSELVES THAN MOST OF THE OTHER RACES.

Publicity of this type of immorality and illegitimacy had its beginning when a news columnist, Tony Weitzel, of the *Chicago Daily News*, told about the Chicago Social worker who helped fill out a questionnaire for an *unwed* mother of six children. When asked the question: "Are you employed?" she answered: "Well, ma'm, I used to go out by the day, but now I work full time for . . . THEY SEND ME \$190.00 a month."

It is becoming known, and openly admitted, that innumerable women in many States, have discovered how to live as they desired, without working, socially acceptable and according to their estimates of comfort, simply by taking advantage of the generosity of the State. All that is necessary is for them to have

numerous—the more the better—illegitimate children. No one seems to be concerned about the immorality—something that would have been shunned by EVERY RESPECTABLE PERSON, ESPECIALLY WOMEN, ONLY A SHORT TIME AGO—or that THE PAYMENT MADE TO THESE "mothers" IS PAID FROM THE TAXES OF HONEST, HARD-WORKING MEN AND WOMEN, AND THAT IT IS A BLOT UPON ALL WOMANHOOD.

These women so engaged, have no worries about unemployment or even sickness. Besides the regular monthly payments, they also receive free medical treatment, while in some States there is a clothing allowance, the payment of rent and fuel bills, free school lunches and even Government food. . . . all this, and the monthly check which in some reported cases runs as high as \$400,000. . . . ALL TAX FREE, while the legitimate mother may be ill, without medical aid, but because she is married is not eligible for State aid.

If these women so engaged feel the need of more money, all that is necessary, is to have another illegitimate child, and the monthly check will be raised accordingly. Some States have a maximum figure a recipient can collect. There is a report of a "lady," unmarried, living in a city in the conservative State of Pennsylvania, who has eleven living children on public assistance.

Some women making a business of this dishonest gain are married, but their husbands are not known, and are never named in the report. While it is reliably reported that in the county of Cook, Illinois, payments made to unmarried "mothers" comprise some 90% of all payments made to women.

Mississippi is one of the first states to have awakened to this evil, a blot on civilization, morality and human honesty. This State passed a law that only the first illegitimate child is supported by the taxpayers' money. It is also reported that a bill denying aid to the illegitimately born was passed by one branch of the Florida Legislature, but so many were against it in the

other branch, that it was allowed to die and the shame upon honest motherhood continues blithely on. Opposition against the bill was supposedly led by one of the Representatives.

It became known that during 1955, 1,718 "mothers" of illegitimate children were recorded in Fulton County, Atlanta, Georgia. On becoming informed of this situation, Rep. John Ray introduced a bill making it a crime for a woman to give birth to a baby without a husband.¹ But the Legislature thought this was heartless, so nothing was done.

Missouri appears to be another State whose members of the Legislature are in sympathy with immorality, shaming womanhood and motherhood, and worse than wasting the honest taxpayers money. A bill in the Missouri Legislature making the fathers of illegitimate children responsible for their support never came out of committee. Fathers of legitimate children must support them, but fathers of the illegitimate are offered a boon, in the guise of freedom from responsibility for their immorality.

In Illinois a bill was proposed for residence requirements, but the friends of the "women of many virtues" denounced it as discriminatory. It should be recognized that every act of immorality condoned, is a blot on honest men and women, and retards progress towards a higher civilization. The man who has a barrel of good apples and permits a decayed apple to remain among the good ones, will soon find his entire barrel rotten. Likewise, one person with decadent morals may lower the whole social order.

¹ Throughout the ages there have been countless unfortunate and misled women who listened to the wiles of the betrayer and became mothers. Such as these deserve pity, not condemnation, because there was no intent to guilt. Compensation might be denied them, but they should not be made outcasts. It is written that to "make a mistake [an honest mistake] is human," and since we are all guilty, there should be charity.

It is also a gross injustice and contrary to Natural and *Divine Law* because it forces honest men, and indirectly their wives and children, to sacrifice in supporting dishonest, immoral men and women so engaged. It is another step in the deterioration of the Race for citizens to accept and sanction acceptance of a public law of compensation for deliberate exploitation of the State. There should be the strongest condemnation of both the *doers* and **THOSE WHO MAKE THE EVIL PROFITABLE.**

CHAPTER FIVE

Section Four

The Fall of a Great Nation

To get an idea of how a great nation, example to all the world, comprising millions of the most loyal patriotic citizens, could in almost the twinkling of an eye, become a vassal of Russia, requires some understanding of the underlying cause. This cause in its beginning was *not* Communism as the majority believe, but Fabianism and originated in England.

This Society was organized by the intellectuals of England; professors in the leading colleges; professional men of every type. It did not include the "common man." Due to the interchange between American and English Educational leaders, it quickly spread to the important educational leaders in America, then the intellectuals among other professions, including men of political prominence such as Woodrow Wilson. Through the leaders of educational institutions, many of the student body became inoculated with the ideas and from then on to communism was but a step.

Fabianism, considered by scholars as the illegitimate child of Illuminism, was founded by Adam Weishaupt of Bavaria, Germany, 1776, for the propagation of atheism and revolutionary concepts that awakened the spirit of the people of France for the Revolution. The objects as a whole of the German Illuminati were the same as those rampant today in America:

(a) The destruction of Christianity [this is proceeding rapidly] as indicated by the forced removal of the Cross from the graves of soldiers in all parts of the world, though these soldiers were Christians; the prohibition of prayers in public

schools supported by Christians mainly; the suppression of Christmas carols in public schools and even on city owned property, and lastly, the omission of prayers at public meetings, especially the U.N.

(b) The elimination of nations by destroying national loyalty and love of country.

(c) The abolition of morality by catering to illegitimate child-birth by means of supporting unwed mothers who make a business of it.

(d) The destruction of inheritance rights, and ownership of private property.

Fabianism as such, was organized in London in 1883, under the name of "The Fabian Society." Its policy was defined as one of "penetration," the "boring from within." Its aim was the emancipation of land and industrial capitalism (educators and many professional men were notoriously poorly compensated, yet had to maintain a respectable front) from individual ownership, and into the control of a selected group of the community, ostensibly for "the general good," actually for the benefit of the master minds, as none of the mass ever benefited either in England, Russia or any other country.

The Society worked for the extinction of all private property, hence its spirit was socialistic, and it was generally known as "Militant Socialism." The plan included the establishment of regulations for production, distribution and service for the "common good," instead of individual profit for those who had made the effort to build up such property or business.

The Society claimed its intent to be:

1. Propagation of socialism in its application to current problems affecting the people.
2. The solution of social problems by the application of the principles advocated by the Society.
3. Practical application by means of legislation.

George Bernard Shaw, as one of its members, informed the labor government that the Society's only message for the moment was that the *Fabian Society*, *having made Russia a mighty Fabian State*, was about to select Henry Wallace [the destroyer of millions of pounds of flesh of pigs which would have given the poor and working class reasonably priced food] as successor to the then man in office as president of the United States. By this statement they admitted the link between Fabianism and communism in Shaw's grandiose manner.

The Fabians quickly gained power by the class of their converts, and promoted their aims by training socialists, and electing them to positions of power, and the organizing of university committees in England and America for the "permeation" of the student body which has always been their program. By this time Sidney Webb was chairman of the technical education which *directed all higher education in England and this system spread rapidly to the American system*. The Society then created a special center in London which they called the "Political Economic Planning," or P.E.P. [the beginning in America also of initial names for the multitude of Governmental controlled and directed activities to be initiated later].

The head of this foreign planning committee also later directed our O.P.A. in Washington. During this time the N.E.A. and PROGRESSIVE (de) EDUCATION PLAN GAINED CONTROL OF THE AMERICAN EDUCATIONAL SYSTEM. Also at about this time the League for INDUSTRIAL DEMOCRACY AND PUBLIC OWNERSHIP LEAGUE WAS ESTABLISHED.

Good old Harvard University, a traditional American Institution, followed the School of Economics of the London University, with Harold Laski *reportedly* the guiding influence of both institutions. Students were instructed to enter all training schools to indoctrinate future leaders, and this most of them were anxious to do. DID IT NOT MAKE THEM ASSOCIATES WITH THE WORLD'S INTELLECTUAL LEADERS?

When the League of Nations failed due to the wisdom and farsightedness of a few *real* Americans in Congress, the conspirators, (for such they were, against American Nationalism) Fabian Militant Socialists and Marxists, concentrated their efforts on infiltrating our institutions of higher learning, and later all educational systems, boring from within until the influence of their mental poisons reached every segment of society, and the American people were led to sell their Patriotism and Nationalism for less than a mess of pottage.

In May 1945, the one worlders in conjunction with our State Department, set up the UNESCO under House HR Bill 215, for the unquestioned purpose of preparing our former Loyal, Patriotic citizens for a world of socialistic dictatorship by means of *de*-education, social activities and fear of subjugation to diabolical mental health laws. Two days later this was passed by the Senate, and in November 1945, *at a conference in London*, (The American people evidently did not have the brains, or the "stomach" to do it), the constitution for UNESCO was drawn.

In July 1946, a joint resolution passed Congress authorizing appropriations to support the organization, *mostly out of the hardworking American taxpayers' money*.

"Generally unknown, in 1953, Gen. Sumter Lowry of Tampa, Florida, was successful in having a law passed by the United States Congress, prohibiting the dissemination of socialistic UNESCO material in our Public Schools. Few Americans have knowledge of this and less seem to care.

"In 1948 the World Health Organization was set up. This apparently absorbed several international and world wide health programs under one authority, and from all appearance, is not to the benefit of Americans.

"As to its initial character, a booklet of this organization with a preface by ALGER HISS, is reported to have

been published by the Carnegie Foundation while Mr. Hiss was its president. The W.H.O. became an agency working through the U.N., with far reaching authority—great influence on the American Public Health, Education and Welfare Department."

Such is a synopsis of history of the Fabian Society, according to one of its members, and its sinister influence on Education in America.

CHAPTER FIVE

Section Five

Religious Intolerance — A Rebirth, in America, of a Religious Intolerance That Existed in Germany And England Before the Pilgrims Came to America That They Might Worship in Freedom

The liberty of which men throughout the centuries were most jealous, was the right to worship as they pleased.

The early Christians were *really* Christians, because they were ready and willing to give up everything, be thrown to the lions, burned at the stake, or mangled by professional gladiators —CHRISTIANITY LIVED BECAUSE OF THE LIFE BLOOD OF THESE WHO ACTED AS THEY BELIEVED.

The later Christians, those of Germany and England especially, were willing to give up all they possessed, leave dear ones, and face a hazardous journey to the new world, there facing the wilderness, savages and renegades, so that they might worship in freedom. AMERICA WAS BORN—CHRISTIANITY LIVED BECAUSE THESE PEOPLE WERE *men and women in the true sense of the term*. THEY DID NOT HESITATE TO ACCEPT THE RESPONSIBILITY INVOLVED. THEY WERE TOO STRONG IN THEIR FAITH TO FEAR ANYTHING, OR LOWER THEIR DIGNITY BY BEGGING FOR HELP.

After nineteen centuries we are, as far as Christianity is concerned, back to where the start was made, and the whyfor? Might it not be BECAUSE THERE IS ONLY PROFESSION OF FAITH, THE SPIRIT BEING DEAD, THE CHRIST CRUCIFIED ANEW? WHY HAS THAT WHICH NOW *is*, COME TO PASS? Can it be contradicted that man's freedom to worship as

he pleases is based on the same certainty, as that upon which every other liberty is based—ETERNAL VIGILANCE?

Is this freedom to worship now to be taken away from man because he has failed to remember that NO MAN'S RELIGIOUS PRACTICE SHALL BE INTERFERED WITH, *and that if HE PERMITS INTERFERENCE, HE IS NOT ONLY A TRAITOR TO HIMSELF, BUT ALSO TO THE GOD HE PROFESSES TO WORSHIP?* IF MAN PERMITS INTERFERENCE IN HIS RELIGIOUS BELIEF, HE ACTUALLY HELPS TO DESTROY THE CONSTITUTIONALLY GUARANTEED RELIGIOUS LIBERTY TO WORSHIP AS HE BELIEVES, AS WELL AS HIS RELIGIOUS FAITH.

First of all, the Gentile's Cross was taken from him. Did he protest? Was he willing to suffer and even die that he might hold on to that which, rightly understood, is a symbol of salvation and actually not a display of sectarianism but the assurance that God liveth? He did NOT! If he did, his protest was so feeble that if anyone heard it, the protest was easily overruled. That was the first step, the opening wedge to further interference. Now that first step of interference with his religious liberty is followed logically by the second:

"Supt. Pollack¹ of New Jersey has sent out a directive² that from now on no more likenesses of Christ, and

¹ Facts must be faced. In almost all reports where there has been interference with the various former practices of Christian adherents, one of the minority groups was blamed. Does Supt. Pollack belong to the minority group? If he does, then *who* appointed him to his position over schools to which practically none but the children of professed Christians belong, the *minority groups having schools of their own—the teachings and practices of which have not in any way been interfered with by the majority groups?* Or is Supt. Pollack a professed Christian who is active in destroying the age old belief in the Christos, the spiritual in man?

² Is this merely a directive, an edict for which one man, or

no more hymns, are to be in evidence at Christmas time in the public schools of the Christian State³ of New Jersey. The New Jersey State Legislature⁴ has passed an anti-discrimination⁵ law which renders all Christmas observances illegal in 1958."

a small group is responsible? If it is not based in Legislative enactment, then where are the Christian parents of the children who attend the schools over which Supt. Pollack presides? Where are the taxpayers who maintain these schools? Where is their *spirit* of liberty, their nineteenth century belief and demand for religious freedom? Is one man, or are a few men, permitted to set at naught all that millions of men have fought and died for? If so, then candid truths compel us to conclude they deserve just this.

³ Can a Christian State, if such exists today, be compelled to bend the knee to any group of men, who would fight to the death *to maintain their own schools without interference*, and who would never permit any man or group of men, to interfere with their religious practices, though wholly contrary to what the millions once held as sacred to their own beliefs and practices?

⁴ Time and again have we read newspaper reports of interference with Christian practices by members of minority groups and, being published and not contradicted, such reports appeared to be based on fact. Now that the New Jersey Legislature has passed such a Law, may we ask: "Do all of the members of that body belong to the minority group, or groups? If not, *who* elected them into office? *Are not those responsible who elected them, and permit them to pass legislation inimical to the very highest, or what should be the highest, in man's nature? Is it not those who sold their Christ, debased into the lowest dregs their Spiritual selves?*

⁵ They call this an "anti-discrimination law." Is it not the *highest degree of discrimination, when comparatively few men, whatever their race, creed or color, are permitted to dictate the religious practices of the millions?* Where, oh, where, is the religious freedom for which our forefathers fought? Where is

"Observances of the birth of our Lord have been outlawed in Sierra Madre, California, and Lake View, Illinois," according to newspaper reports. Images of the Christ are not permitted to be exhibited⁶, and the singing of carols to His glory are likewise prohibited by law.⁷

Again the question, who is responsible for such prohibition? Are those who so dictate in these cities in the majority, paying the taxes to maintain these cities? If not, WHERE IS THE MAJORITY? WHAT IS IT DOING? ACTUALLY, SHOULD THEY HAVE ANY PRIVILEGES IF THEY ARE NOT WILLING TO BE VIGILANT IN MAINTAINING THEM?

"Att'y General Pat Brown of California has ruled⁸ that God⁹ cannot be mentioned in the classroom. Con-

the guaranteed right of *government by the majority?* Where are the believers in God of yesteryear?

⁶ This would appear to be directed more against the Catholics than against the Protestants; the Protestants are not generally given to the exhibiting of images; some sects distinctly prohibiting it. As a nation founded on Christian principles—an educational system of Christian origin—even though there be but a few Christians left, their religious rights should in no wise be infringed upon or curtailed, any more than should any other religious concepts and practices.

⁷ Who were those who passed such a Law? On what portion of the Constitution was it based? *Where were those who should have been the active and vigilant opponents of such discriminatory legislation?*

⁸ On what Legislative enactment, or on what part of the Constitution, does the Attorney General base his edict? Where are the citizens still imbued with the *American Spirit* that such a Law, if it exists, is not annulled, or that a man in office be permitted to issue such an edict? Is the spirit of liberty, *the love of religious freedom for all, dead in California?* It would appear so.

⁹ At last there is evidently one who is greater and more

sistent with this ruling, one of the schools in California has instructed its librarian to examine all books¹⁰ in the school library and remove from circulation those books¹⁰ that mention God."

exalted than God. This recalls to mind a saying by the *Nazarene*: "Get thee behind me Satan," but in reverse, i.e., get thee behind me, God, Here I am in command. It has been said that a people is no greater and no better than its laws. This ruling in California would appear to give substance to this saying.

¹⁰ Great is the name of Hitler. This edict certainly should shame us when we are given to condemning Hitler for burning books though not denying God considering the fact that here in America even books that mention God can be eliminated from the school libraries, where youths might learn respect and reverence for the Creator of all things.

Does such a ruling not outlaw the pledge of allegiance "to the flag—one nation, under God, indivisible?" Were not all Constitutional documents of the Nation planned and provided for subjugation to but one—the Deity?

The actions of the men elected or selected by the people to office either commend, or condemn the electors.

CHAPTER SIX

Civil Rights Laws. Civil Rights Legislation in Action. The Unrighteousness, and Gross Injustices in These Acts

Reason and common sense would indicate that Civil Rights Laws would guarantee *all men* a greater degree of justice and fair dealing, than was possible under laws already existing, and it is certain that the majority of people so believed. It would also seem that the Legislatures of the States that enacted such Laws, as well as the members of Congress, had this object in mind. From the very beginning of this legislation it quickly became apparent that the direct opposite was true; that the rights and privileges which all men formerly possessed were taken from the majority and conferred upon the minority.

The cry for FAIRDEALING OR BROTHERHOOD was the fabled SONG OF THE SIREN, because "Brotherhood" began to mean the big brother should, aye, MUST, give to the little brother; while the little brother gave nothing in return to his big brother, *i.e.*, experience has shown that Civil Rights Legislation has resulted in degradation and a form of slavery of the majority of the descendants of those who made America great.

New York was one of the first States to enact Civil Rights Laws. How does this human "Rights" Law work in action? To cite just one instance, an item of news published in the *New York Gazette*, December 2, 1956, reported the instance of a Lake barber who was fined \$100.00 for exercising the rights guaranteed him by the Constitution and refusing to serve against his will, when asked to cut the hair of a Negro:¹

¹ A great war was fought and many lives lost that men should be free to choose whom they served, the slaves having been

"A Warren County Court on December 1st, returned a verdict of guilty in the case of George Deputy and his wife Anna. They were accused by William Lowery of violating Section 40, of the States' Civil Rights act. . . ."¹

This incident occurred at a time when the American people, always ready to help and give asylum to the oppressed, were engaged in collecting millions of dollars to bring to America thousands of Hungarians who were oppressed, many enslaved, by the Russian hordes in control of their country.

These thousands of Hungarians who were trying to escape injustice, tyranny in its worst form, and interference with their personal rights and free choice of action, are white people. If they settle in New York State they will not know the freedom of their dreams. They will *not dare* to open an *Hungarian* restaurant, an *Hungarian* barber shop, or any business under the name of Hungarian, and cater solely to the people of their own race. If they attempt it, they will be right back into the arms of persecution.

It is not a question of white or black, Gentile or Jew. It is certain that if any State enacted a law which made it unlawful for a white man to serve another white man, or if he were arrested for serving a white man, or refusing to serve a white man, white men *en masse* would rise in protest against it. They would claim rightly, that a man has a right to serve, or refuse to serve, any other person; to work for another white man, or refuse to do so, to either employ, or not employ, another white man.

forced to serve their masters. All those lives were lost, property destroyed valued at untold millions, and men embittered by the resulting chaos, and for what: *That the majority, at the behest of the minorities, should be forced, against their will* (as were the slaves in former times) *to serve the favored minorities?* If this is *not slavery, what is it?*

Is Civil Rights Legislation not what the lamented President Theodore Roosevelt called *Class Legislation*, because it favors one class and would force another class, group or race, or association of men to be subject to THE WISHES, OR DEMANDS OF ANOTHER GROUP? Does it not force a person of one group to do that which one of another class is free to refuse to do?

If this barber had been either a Negro or a Jew, an Italian or member of any other race, and had refused to serve a white man, a gentile, or member of any other religious denomination, the millions of gentiles or even atheists, would NOT think of race or creed, but that he was A FREE AMERICAN, and had the inalienable right to serve, or NOT to serve, whomsoever he pleased, or to choose to be served by anyone he pleased, but to have no compelling power, or right to employ force in either instance.

A well educated, highly placed Negro, known to millions, posed this question:

"If such a Law is enforceable, how long will it be before powerful interested groups will have Laws passed to force, for instance, one colored man in business to serve another colored man, whether or not such persons are desirable as customers, or detrimental to their business?

"May not such Laws, especially in certain districts, interfere with any business in which the colored man may engage, forcing him to employ those men of his own race, whether or not they are fitted for the position or the work? If the white man can be forced by any law to serve any man, white or colored, then it is only a step further before the colored man, the Jew, the Hungarian, the Italian or men of any race will be in the white man's position. In my humble opinion, this is *Class Legislation*, and my people, being in the minority, will ultimately become the

greater sufferers and the victims, and actually be returned to slavery without any rights to choose either business or social associates, or be forced to accept those chosen for them.

"Has it not been the eternal law of nature throughout the ages that the favored of today become the victims of the morrow, while the victims of today, the oppressed, become the rulers? Even Napoleon, Hitler, Mussolini and the many others of their class and power, were compelled to learn this lesson by bitter experience.

"Is not injustice forever a boomerang that finally reacts upon the ones who bring about the injustice?

"Speaking of the Hungarians now being brought into America, what has America and its people accomplished by spending millions and bringing thousands out of bondage by immediately refusing, as a result of its laws, the rights and privileges of a truly free people?

"As I understand it, Civil Laws are supposed to be for the protection of my people. Can this be accomplished by taking the liberties from other men and turning what might be, or become good will, into resentment, and finally a hatred that devours? What is the answer?"

The Civil Rights delusion dates back many years. During President Truman's term of office, Congressman Frank W. Boykin of Alabama had inserted into the *Congressional Record* a newspaper editorial on the Truman *Civil Rights Committee* considered by many as the most comprehensive statement ever made:

"The goal as set by the President's committee would be a direct assault on the American way of life. It would mean bureaucratic interference, enforced by Federal authorities in the PERSONAL and PRIVATE affairs of *every individual, business establishment and institution*.

"There is an unalterable conclusion that the forces behind this recommendation seek enactment of a Federal Law which would be enforced AGAINST ALL CHURCHES, private schools, private hospitals, at least applied to physicians and surgeons, if not to other professional people.

"Under the proposal, States which do not fall in line with this impractical, ridiculous and dangerous mandate, would be deprived of Federal aid funds for education, health, housing and other public services.

"In its recommendations for a Fair Employment Practice Act, the President's committee would have the Federal Government *do more* than take jurisdiction over Federal employment. It would step into private business, to tell businessmen whom they could hire, and perhaps in what jobs they could use certain individuals they had been forced to hire.

"This is one of the most dangerous proposals ever made by any group with official standing. It would provide the perfect excuse for a snooping Federal agency interfering with the legitimate civil rights of free Americans. . . . The proposal contains germs of disease far more deadly than those which the committee seeks to cure."

Civil Rights Legislation—cannot correctly and within the meaning of the term "Law," be called a *Law*. It is *for* the minority, and *against* the majority. New York among other States, and Congress, passed such Legislation despite the then President's warning. The minority in New York favored this legislation, and quickly took advantage of it to the eternal shame of America, proving that once an opening wedge has been successfully inserted, there is no length to which those may go who believe themselves specially favored. This assertion is fully made manifest by a minority group interfering with the plans of the President of the United States, putting to shame Amer-

ica's vaunted hospitality in the snub it delivered to King Saud of Arabia as the personally invited guest of the President.

The incident that took place in New York during the week of January 27th to 31st, 1957, must have been a shock to many of the advocates of such legislation, and what an AWAKENING OF MILLIONS OF AMERICANS WHO NEVER GAVE MUCH THOUGHT TO THE SUBJECT. What took place in New York is evident proof that all so-called "Civil" or "human" rights are only for the self-chosen few, and NEVER for the many.

Throughout the years, especially during the past fifteen, the city fathers, as well as the people of New York, were overly anxious to make the visit of foreigners an occasion for celebration. This included even those KNOWN TO BE MASS MURDERERS and the ENSLAVERS OF MILLIONS UNDER THE MOST INHUMAN CONDITIONS, AS WELL AS THE ORIGINATORS OF METHODS FOR THE PURPOSE OF THE MENTAL AND PHYSICAL DEGENERATION OF SUBJECT PEOPLE, OF THOSE WHOSE END IN VIEW WAS, AND STILL IS, THE SUBJUGATION OF THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES, REDUCING THEM TO MORONS OR WORSE, AND FINAL ENSLAVEMENT. WE HAVE THEIR WORD FOR THIS. No need for us to accuse them. To all this hand shaking, bending the knees, and lavish entertainments, the city fathers and members of the minority groups gladly lent their aid.

Only a few weeks before this incident concerning King Saud, Nehru of India, the virtual dictator of an almost uncountable millions known as "untouchables," many living in unimaginable squalor, with sex life almost defying description, was received with the highest possible honors, with no thought whatsoever being given to the sub-human existence of many of his subjects.

It is possible, but not assuredly true, that many of these millions are slaves in one form or another? What is certain, is that they would be far better off if they were actually slaves,

for the reason that as a rule, slaves are fairly well housed and fed, because this enables them to render better services.

These millions of India live in the utmost ignorance and under a system of superstition that defies the dark ages, prohibiting them to kill the deadly cobra, destroyer of thousands by an indescribable death; preventing them also from corralling animals to stop them from polluting their drinking water, the cause of the death of untold numbers. This man who has the power, and might bring about reforms, and could permit his people to live like human beings, but does nothing about it, was welcomed with open arms by all, including the members of the minority groups. Furthermore, *it should be impressed upon all Americans*, that the Religion of Nehru is neither Christian nor Judaism² and that though he is not outspoken (honest) relative to religious teachings and practices, Christian missionaries have not been especially welcome in India.

For the first time in American history, its hallowed traditions have been put to gross shame. Not only that, but the President of the United States and his personally invited guests have been insulted, and by those asking for special privileges—civil rights—and whose demands have in some instances been granted.

Once the people of a country permit any group to interfere or grossly insult the guest of another, *and especially those of the state, the government and the President*, then truly have they descended far down the ladder of tradition and all that truly American people hold dear.

What is the excuse for this unforgivable behavior and

² The religion of Nehru and his people in India, is admittedly his own business, and unless we misunderstand, one purpose of Civil Rights legislation is to assure each one the right to believe in, and practice, his own special faith without interference. With this, every *real American* heartily agrees.

insult by the official of one of America's greatest cities, and of a group, or minority groups that have been favored?

The accusation against the President's invited guests—invited for a special purpose, with the intent to benefit all people, King Ibn Saud of Arabia, is (a) that he is Anti-Catholic (non-Christian); (b) that there are still slaves in his country, ostensibly by his consent.³

A moment's thought must convince anyone that the charge of slavery, though true, is both nonsensical and illogical when compared with the fact that Russia has untold thousands of men and women from many countries, confined in mines and camps, living in utter destitution and indescribable horror, to King Ibn Saud's one. Nevertheless, Russia has the place of highest honor and power in the U. N., and many of her personnel have special (extra-ordinary) privileges; are living like Princes, and are constantly feted. Is it not high time that the American citizen awakens from his inertia and begins to use his reasoning faculties instead of permitting himself to be "brain-washed," *i.e.*, hypnotized, into accepting the opinions of others, and the conclusions of those whose one intent is to destroy his thinking-reasoning ability in order to enslave him?

To digress: America is a Christian Nation from every point of view, beginning with the coming of the Pilgrims to New England, and the Catholic Fathers from Mexico and France to America. As an uncontradicted fact, the Jewish

³ It is the supposition, a Law by long acceptance, that neither the Government, nor its citizens, can dictate, or interfere, with the governing, or internal affairs, of another country. If it could, then why have not we, or more especially, why have not the minority groups stepped in and stopped the butchery of millions of Christians, and the worst kind of slavery in Russia and satellite Countries of Russia; but instead, *have wined, dined and applauded the dictators?* These are the questions to which millions of Americans are now demanding an answer.

philosophy and law are diametrically opposed to the Christian concepts. The Jews, it is also freely admitted, are Christianity's oldest and naturally greatest enemies. No other religious group, neither Mohammedism, nor Buddhism, is as strongly opposed to Christianity as is Judaism. Nevertheless, *and mark this truth well: NEVER except possibly in individual instances, have the Jews been persecuted, or interfered with in America.*

Never has either Catholicism or Protestantism interfered with the arrangements of any President or other public official to entertain a Jewish layman or statesman, either because of his moral laws, his teachings contrary to, and in condemnation of Christianity, or because of his interests in Communism.

Considering these facts, and that in the present instance of unbelievable public behavior, the Jews⁴ are accused of being the strongest advocates of the grossly MISNAMED Civil Rights. The question now asked is: Are the Jews ready and willing to allot to ALL others the same rights, privileges, respects and opportunities allotted to them?

In contrast to what took place in New York on the arrival of King Saud at the invitation of President Eisenhower, and in comparison with the action of the group responsible as publicized, we refer the reader to The New Year's issue, 1957, of the *Empire State Mason*, Page 10-12. Here we see brotherhood in action.

At the Celebration of the 100th Anniversary of the Scottish Rite Masons of New York, a non-Christian, Sir Yadavendra Singhji, Maharajsh of Patialate of Northern India, was not only received, but highly honored. This is an institution of men of all

⁴ Let it be understood that whatever reference is made to the Jews, is done so because newspapers generally were rather positive in their reports that it was Mayor Wagner and the Jews—as far as we know, no other group was mentioned—who were the only ones who opposed rendering the usual and proper respect to these foreign visitors.

countries, ALL religious creeds, all races, interfering with the religious beliefs and internal affairs of no country, but demanding only a respect for each other's view.⁵ These men do NOT ask for any legislation giving them special privileges, or protection, against any other groups. Their actions, their examples, are their protection and their honor.

⁵ We have the honor of belonging to the various Masonic groups. Not holding an official position, we speak merely as a member of this honored body of men.

CHAPTER SIX

Section One

The Brotherhood in Masonry

This cardinal principle in Masonry of accepting a man for **WHAT HE IS** is one of the *fundamentals* that has been the attracting power that has drawn men of the highest qualifications from every walk of life, and built it into an institution of many millions of men; men who, once members of the Fraternity sought to reach the highest goal in Masonry by their own efforts and uprightness.

Even those members of the Masonic bodies who did not attain to the higher honors of the Fraternity, have always been proud of being members, as well they might be, and it is doubtful if any of them ever thought that they might be legislated into second class citizens. Certainly it never occurred to them that those in the higher ranks proudly wearing the insignia of their office would, like the legend of the peacock, be put to shame by the knowledge that they were no longer masters of their own actions.

As an example, there is a legend—and all legends as the NAZARENE declared are built on facts—that the peacock, proud as he may well be of his gorgeous plumage, displaying it for his own glorification and the approval of the female whenever possible, is always on dangerous ground when he does it. When his glorious possession—and **IT IS HIS POSSESSION**—is spread in all its wonderous beauty, if he even so much as accidentally glances at his unusually ugly feet, he feels shame instead of exultation, and “his tail falls” leaving him in abject commonness.

In a sense, at least, the legend has practical application to

Masons who have labored for long years, both in the "vineyard" of Masonry itself, and in efforts to help their fellow men, have earned, and received the high honors in which he takes *just* pride, there is now the danger of DISHONOR that pushes aside at one fell swoop, pride in any, and all honors he may have achieved. SINCE THE PASSAGE OF THE NATIONAL CIVIL LAW LEGISLATION, HE IS NO LONGER A FIRST CLASS CITIZEN OF A GREAT REPUBLIC, AND HIS HONORS AVAIL HIM NOTHING. Achieve as he will, he is now only:

A Second Class Citizen

He is no longer "master of his castle," the proud owner of a business he has built up through years of long hours of work he, the once proud CITIZEN FIRST CLASS, *must take orders*, or face arrest, fine or possible imprisonment if he refuses to do the will of those who may not be fit to lace his "boots or sandals" and this has been brought about by the help of many of his fellow members, members of his own race working actively for the passage of this UNrighteous Legislation. Man of high degree among his select fellow men, he returns to his business and lo, he must take orders in practically all of his affairs, from those who have had no part in his efforts to establish himself.

Being conscious of this his "Peacock's feet." His pride in honors fall. Even his home—his legendary "castle" is no longer under his control.

Is there proof aside of the mandates of the Civil Rights enactments? There is plenty, and it requires that only a few instances be reported to be certain that he the white man, builder of a mighty nation, is no longer the "master of his ship of state or master of his fate."

According to various newspaper reports, tabulated by the *White American News Service* and uncontradicted, we quote, *not verbatim*:

"Miami, Ohio, Miami Hotel, a white girl manicurist in a barber shop refused to manicure the finger nails of a Negro.¹ She was haled before one Judge Emmet J. Jackson who fined her \$50.00. The manager of the hotel in which the barber shop is located had ordered the Negro to leave. He left, swore out a warrant for the manicurist who was later tried and fined. The Negro had sued for several thousand dollars.

"Stockton, California, Archie Manley, a Negro preacher, was awarded \$200.00 in damage because a barber, Robert Murrillo, refused to cut his hair. This violated California's Civil Rights laws. Mr. Murrillo's plea was that a Negro's hair is different and that he had never learned to cut it. Municipal Judge William L. Dozier found him guilty and is said to have commented: 'Well, you must learn to cut a Negro's hair. It is the Law.'

"Pontiac, Michigan, seven bowling alleys were sued \$5,000.00 each by Negroes who claimed they were 'discriminated against' in violation of Michigan's 'civil rights' laws because they were denied permission to bowl. A suit was also filed seeking an injunction to compel the alleys to permit Negroes to use them.

"San Francisco, California, two Negroes charged they were 'discriminated against' by a waiter at Grotto Nine, a well known restaurant on Fisherman's Wharf, which refused to permit them to occupy a booth overlooking the wharf² 'solely by reason of their race and color.' The Negroes refused to sit any-

¹ This is no reflection on the Negro race. It was not the Negroes who fought for the passage of the Civil Rights Laws, but men of the once proud race now reduced to a state of shame because they *permit* themselves to be subjected to being forced to accept orders from many who are in no sense their equals.

where else even when a choice table was reserved.² Their complaint alleges the restaurant follows 'a policy of flagrant violation of the rights of colored customers in an effort to humiliate them and discourage their patronage.' A suit asking \$2,000 in damages was filed under Section 51 and 52 of the California Civil Code.

"Belleville, N. J. When Negress Edith Marchall and her three children entered Herman's Bar and Grill, they were told by Mrs. Eva Barkei, wife of the owner, that she did not serve children. The Negress said they just wanted to use the rest room and Mrs. Barkei told her the toilets were for the use of her customers only, suggesting: 'Why don't you go to one of your own places?' The Negress pushed past Mrs. Barkei and used the toilet anyway. Then Edith filed suit. After a preliminary hearing, Magistrate W. Gilbert Mason ordered Mrs. Barkei held for Grand Jury.

How long, oh, Lord, will the millions of white men in America be willing to remain second class citizens, the compulsory servants (slaves to be commanded) of any race, even their own?

² If a white man entered this restaurant, or any other first class restaurant, the proprietor would be within his rights to refuse such a request, and this certainly would be true if the table had been reserved. Moreover, a white customer would not feel humiliated if refused a special location or special table. Such a refusal occurs frequently in practically every first class restaurant, and nothing is thought of it.

CHAPTER SIX

Section Two

The Dangers to All Freedoms in National Civil Rights Laws

Many citizens imbued with the *true American spirit*, including the former President Truman warned against the enactment of a "Civil Rights" Law, but to no avail:

Best of Broadway — Ed Mulhar Southerners Assail Civil Rights Program

"Washington, Feb. 7 (AP)—Southern witnesses denounce President Eisenhower's civil rights program today as containing the seed of a 'Soviet type gestapo.'

"Critics from Georgia and Alabama opened such a broadside before the House Judiciary subcommittee that northern members protested vigorously against what they called 'inflammatory' statements.

"'Enactment of this legislation' Attorney General Eugene Cook of Georgia said, 'would result in creation of a Federal gestapo which would hold needless investigations, pry into the affairs of the States and their citizens, and intimidate a majority of our citizens solely to appease the politically powerful minority pressure groups inspired by the communistic ideologies of the police state.'

Judge Speaks Up

"Rep. Henderson Lanham (D., Ga.), appearing as a witness against the civil rights legislation, said, 'Stalin himself could not have conceived' as effective a surrender of local powers as the program would authorize.

"Circuit Judge George C. Wallace of Clayton, Ala.,

told the sub-committee he was 'not going to permit any unlawful interference by the Federal police in my district.' He said he would 'order the arrest of any Federal agent' who came into his judicial district and demanded the jury list.

"Testimony favoring the legislation came from Walter Reuther, president of the United Auto Workers, who said it was time for Congress to change its 'do-nothing record' on civil rights.

"Reuther contended, States, communities and labor unions were making progress in eliminating racial and religious discrimination and 'only Congress has failed to act'."

Civil Rights Discussed in Congress

The experience with the administration of the Civil Rights Law in New York State appears to be arousing the apprehension of the public against all such legislation. Even some members of the House of Representatives who were formerly in favor of such a Law, turned against the enactment of a Civil Rights Law as the following clearly indicates:

Civil Rights Remarks of Hon. William E. Miller of New York

"Mr. Miller of New York:—'Mr. Chairman, I offer a preferential motion.'

The clerk read as follows:

"Mr. Miller of New York moves that the Committee do now rise and report the bill back to the House with a recommendation that the enactment clause be stricken out.

"Mr. Miller of New York:—'Mr. Chairman, as one who all my life has believed and even now believes fundamentally in the proposition of civil rights; as one who sponsored this legislation; as one who voted for it in the sub-committee and in the full committee, but as one who

after further deliberation and after listening to the debate, and one who is a lawyer, I must in good conscience state that I make this motion in utter sincerity because I am profoundly convinced that this legislation *in its present form will destroy more civil liberties and civil rights than it will ever protect.*

"Let me make one thing clear.

"This bill in its present form gives no right, no privilege, no benefit to a single individual in the United States that he does not already have. But what does it do?

"It creates a commission with the authority to subpoena me or you or anyone in this country, to subpoena us any place, to Washington, California, or Texas, and hold us under subpoena at our own expense interminably: on what? Some allegation perhaps that I am guilty of exerting unwarranted economic pressure on somebody. Who? The corner grocer, who alleges that I do not trade with him and I get my friends not to trade with him because he is a Jew or a Catholic.¹

"This bill provides that there may be utilized the services of all volunteers who wish to volunteer their services in the work of this Commission. I will bet you there is a whole regiment of the . . . ready to volunteer their services as soon as this becomes a law. Every single person in this country who ever had a conservative thought or professed a conservative word will be served with questionnaires and will be subpoenaed before the Commission.

"This bill authorizes the Attorney General to do

¹ The most innocent might be subject to arrest; transported to another state; suffer costly litigation, and possible ruin of business, with no possibility of redress even if found innocent, while the accuser would suffer no consequences for what might have been a most malicious act.

something that, if any other lawyer in America did it, would be disbarred for life. No lawyer has the right to institute action and represent anybody without the consent of that person, yet this bill permits the Attorney General to institute action on behalf of people who do not solicit his help and against people who are charged with what? An allegation, perhaps, that somebody's voting right is being affected in New York State.

"We have people coming in by the boatloads from almost every country in the world and from Puerto Rico. We have requirements administered by State officials for voting rights in New York, residential requirements, and literacy requirements, and here we have the Attorney General given the right to summarily hale someone into court, and temporarily restrain him in his activities without any appeal at all or reference to or use of the administrative procedures set up by the State of New York and your State, which *would destroy the very fundamentals of States' rights in this country.*²

"Mr. Chairman, I was an assistant prosecutor at the Nuremberg trial. It was my job to try to figure out how it was that Hitler succeeded in imposing his control over the good German people for so many years. I found that he did it by decree after decree, just like this piece of legislation, because the legislation or the decree was aimed at dividing the people of Germany instead of uniting them. The only thing that ever made this country great was the happy blend of labor and management working together.

"Mr. Chairman, I shall ask for a teller vote on my

² It would likewise destroy the fundamental rights of every one but the most favored; possibly most frequently by the acts of the very people the citizens helped to save from sorrow, suffering and gross despotism.

motion. I believe it should be adopted. Then we will go back to the work in this House."—*Emphasis ours.*

A powerful voice that warned against the passage of a National Bill was that of David Lawrence in the *U. S. News and World Report*, July 19, 1957, page 45, under the heading: "*What's ALL the Fuss About Voting Rights?*"

"The establishment of a judicial oligarchy and a federal despotism is not the way to assure 'civil rights.' It is the way to inflict more 'civil wrongs.'

"It is a deliberate defiance of everybody's 'civil rights,' particularly the rights of the people themselves and of the several States as guaranteed to them heretofore by the Tenth Amendment.

"It is the way to disunity and national frustration.

"It is the way to a breakdown of the spirit and letter of the Constitution itself.

"It is the age-old way of coercion and tyranny that leads inevitably to violence. It is not the way of volition, the way of patient persuasion, the way of reason."

All Warnings by American Spirited Citizens Ignored

Congress passed the *Civil Rights Bill*, and in the opinion of many of those best informed, we have retrogressed to the Carpet Bag days that followed the Civil War.

The white man is now a Second Class citizen. The descendants of the 1776 days who could, and *did* "go it alone" and carved a mighty nation out of a wilderness, despite all the efforts of hostile Indians, and renegade white men more treacherous than the Indians, are compelled to take a "back seat" and apparently doing it without much of a protest. The bitterest "medicine" of all, *is the fact that the degrading potion was handed them by fellow white men.*

Mr. Aldrich Blake, a nationally known commentator, in his book *ARE CIVIL RIGHTS WORTH IT?* states in part:

"The President of the United States like all white men is a 'second class citizen.' He resides in Pennsylvania. That state has a so-called 'civil rights code.' Under that code, a Negro, if refused service, may file a legal complaint against the white owner of a private restaurant. His legal presumption is that the service was refused solely because the Negro is black. The white owner is subject to both fine and imprisonment. The same restaurant *can refuse service to the American president* (or any other than a colored person), yet he cannot sue under the civil rights code because both he and the owner are white.

"There are 19 northern states with compulsory civil rights codes that apply variously to privately owned and operated restaurants, cafes, bars, cocktail rooms, hotels, motels, apartment houses, tourist courts, trailer camps, barber and beauty shops, dance halls, skating rinks and swimming pools.

"The millions of white citizens who live in these states include . . . (even those Hungarians who came to America to escape liquidation or worse) of whatever national origin—are all, like the President, second class citizens (in these states). The Negro, if refused service or accommodation, has his day in court. The White citizen does not. This is what the Civil Righters call 'equality before the law.' In truth, it is INequality before the law. It is the grossest sort of DISCRIMINATION against the white citizen (whatever his national origin). A citizen who is denied equal justice—the most valuable of all human rights—is, then, a second class citizen."—*Emphasis ours.*

YOU DON'T BELIEVE IT. If you are an American citizen of the majority group, make the experiment by refusing service

to a specially favored group, and learn by experience; or watch your newspapers for items telling of the experiences, arrests and fines, of those who thought they had Constitutional rights as *free* American citizens.

POSTSCRIPT:

Numerous Civil Rights Bills FAR MORE VICIOUS than the former have been introduced during the present (1959) session of Congress and there is grave danger of the passage of some of them unless the American people awaken from their inertia and protest their passage.

CHAPTER SEVEN

*The Ungodly and Unholy Methods Already in Practice,
Visioned for the Sterilization of All Women Except
A Limited Number to be Employed as "Breeders."
The Substitution of Unnatural Methods for
Insemination, and Other Means of a Most
Damnable Nature for the Artificial
Creation of Soulless Creatures.*

"The Nazis were more scientific than the present rulers of Russia, and were more inclined towards the sort of atrocities I have in mind.

"They were said—I do not know with what truth—to use prisoners in concentration camps as material for all kinds of experiments, some involving death after much pain.

"If they had survived, they would probably have soon taken to scientific breeding.¹ Any nation which adopts this practice will, within a generation, secure great military advantages.

"The system, one may surmise, will be something like this: EXCEPT POSSIBLY IN THE GOVERNING ARISTOCRACY,² all but 5 per cent of the males and 30 per cent of

¹ The methods to be pursued are of the most unholy and inhuman conceivable, comparable in unhumanity to artificial insemination.

² This "governing aristocracy" as will readily be understood, was composed of Stalin and his associates in Russia, and his satellite states. "In America! 'Oh,'" a friend exclaimed on reading *Russell*, "that cannot be in America. We are in a too enlightened state." *In that very attitude lies the danger; in the idea that it cannot happen here.*

the females will be sterilized. The 30 per cent of females will be expected [compelled] to spend the years from eighteen to forty in reproduction, in order to secure adequate cannon fodder." — *Bertrand Russell*.

"As a rule, artificial insemination will be preferred to natural methods. The unsterilized, if they desire the pleasure of love will usually have to seek them with sterilized partners." — *Bertrand Russell*.

How immune are the American people to such an idea? Not the Fabians—the Aristocratic Socialists—and *the vicious Communists*, the enemies of God and Man, but Americans whom one would naturally consider as the very Soul of Americanism? If any one has the foolish idea that Americans in high places would not lend themselves to these sub-human ideas and practices, let them, for their own and their family's safety, investigate. As a single example:

"Reuter Press dispatch from Tokio dated October 28, 1955, states that Doctor Elmer Pendell of Baldwin-Wallace College, Berea, Ohio, claimed that 'The reckless reproduction of our relatively brainless citizenry has caused a decline in human standards.' He advocated the 'government should establish a *legal* family limit and sterilize mothers who exceeded that limit'." — *The Red Fog Over America*, by William Guy Carr, R. D., R.C.N.

Carefully consider this statement. Did the good, kindly Christian people of Berea arise as one and demand that this man resign his position from the College for teaching such a practice to the students, brain-washing them into Inhumanity? Did they make it plain to him that a moral leper was not wanted in their community, or even the State? Did Dr. Pendell deny he had made such statements?

If the government should "establish such a legal family

limit by means of sterilization,"³ then it could establish ANY OTHER LEGAL PROCEDURE FOR ANY PURPOSE DEALING WITH HUMAN RELATIONSHIP, AND THE MEANS AND MANNER OF REPRODUCTION, and humans would become either Soulless automatons or breeders like animals. The beginning of such legislation would be the first step toward governing all human relationship that makes a man a man, and a woman a woman.

*The Final Outlook of Planned Breeding As a
Result of Various Advocated Methods*

"Sires will be chosen for various qualities, some for muscle, others for brains. All will have to be healthy, and unless they are to be the fathers of oligarchs they will have to be of a submissive and docile disposition."⁴

"Children will . . . be taken from their mothers and reared by professional nurses."⁵

"Gradually, by selective breeding the congenital differences between ruler and ruled, will increase until they become almost {different} species."⁶—Bertrand Russell.

The matter of sterilization of human beings is one of the most horrible and degrading conceptions of which the human

³ Some States already have sterilization laws on their books. Thousands are being sterilized for various causes. Some for crimes committed, but others on the border line of controls, not justified for the protection of the mass. Further controls are already planned.

⁴ The various methods *now* in full force have already been described.

⁵ Recognizing as we must, that millions of children are almost wholly or totally neglected by their parents, creating an untold number of delinquents with criminal tendencies, this would not be too difficult to be brought about.

⁶ The human family will no longer be human, but lower than the animal creation.

mind is capable,⁷ because it would negate the first great human-*Divine Law*. In this respect we cannot deal separately with the human and the *Divine Law*, but must consider them as one, and this one Law is at the very foundation of the Christian, and many of the non-Christian concepts.

The outlines of a universal, world-wide plot for the control of births according to specific plans which have in no sense the benefit of mankind as their motive, is becoming increasingly clear. Having its beginning in Asiatic countries, then embracing Japan, India, Europe generally, and completing the vicious circle in America.

"Feelers" of public reaction to the concepts of controlling births by various unholy methods of which the most approved is castration, are beginning to appear clock-like in newspapers and magazines. The groundwork is to establish universal fear that VERY soon, perhaps by the end of the century, there will not be sufficient food to feed the people, and instill the certainty in the minds of the people that limitation of childbirths even by unsexing millions and making of them Soulless beings, is to be preferred to starvation, so that they will not protest the passage of vicious Legislative enactments to bring this about.

The latest and most glaring of these news reports appeared in the widely read *Newsweek*, April 27, 1959, under the heading of *Special Science Report*.

In the subhead the disquieting statement is made:

"At the present growth rate, Cal. Tech's Dr. Harrison calculates by the year 2690 human beings will completely cover the earth's dry land."

The doctor ignores the fact that throughout the ages,

⁷ At the time this was written, we thought the limit of human inhumanity had been reached, but as will be seen, this was merely a beginning of what may be in store for humanity.

several factors effectively controlled mankind's increase, among them pestilence and disease. To this must now be added the destroyers, *denaturing* and the *adulteration* of foods, increasing fatal diseases at an alarming rate; a rate so rapid that, if this continues, the birth rate will not be able to keep pace with the death rate.

The next statement is still more frightening:

"Is birth control an answer to this awesome problem?

WILL GOVERNMENTS TAKE AWAY FROM ANY FAMILIES
THE TRADITIONALLY PRIVATE [and God-given] DECISION
TO BEAR CHILDREN?"—*Emphasis ours.*

The American people, having advanced as far as they have, should give this most careful thought, and awaken to the fact that they must keep constantly alert that the men they elect and select will not pass Legislation that will take from them the last vestige of free choice and individual liberty.

Throughout all time *motherhood* was considered as the *most sacred* of all human relationships. WHY? God could not, or would not, as you please, come to earth to impregnate woman every time a child was to be conceived, therefore he made man a CO-creator with Himself, and woman a CO-producer, giving it into their power to populate the world with others like themselves. In sterilization or castration, man takes it upon himself to destroy this God-like power, and thereby makes of man and woman NON-entities. This is one of the unforgivable sins.

Unfortunately, Dr. Pendell is not the only one in America who has been brainwashed and become a convert of the Hitler-Stalin idea of destroying humanity, and just as unfortunately, it would perhaps not be too difficult to enact such laws and put them into operation. This possibility is based on twenty years of research. It would seem impossible to the normal human mind, especially if that mind has been subject to Spiritual

teachings and influences, to even think of the performance of such a diabolical act.

Nevertheless, we have found that along the western coast of Christian America there are hundreds of women who HAVE HAD THEMSELVES STERILIZED BY THEIR OWN REQUEST FOR THE SOLE PURPOSE THAT THEY MIGHT ENJOY THE PLEASURES of love—carnal passion, without paying the normal price —children. Of the number of women whom we interviewed, one out of every ten had this operation⁸ performed. In many instances, women were not alone the guilty party. One out of every twenty men so interviewed or who consulted us, either had their wives commit the sodden deed—or because of their own desire to avoid responsibilities, or because their wives demanded they do so, had the operation performed on themselves.

These were not isolated instances. Our trips once a year were of prolonged duration, our interviews were many. If so great a number had such operations performed of their own volition, then it can readily be understood that in these districts where this practice is prevalent, it would not be too difficult to convince many more to have such operations, making the beginning of universal practice possible.

To give the public a general idea of the reason, and state of mind of all too many women, we quote from a letter received from one who herself had not had such an operation performed, but speaks for a friend who consulted her:

"Would you please advise me if I should say any more to a good friend of mine who is soon to have her fourth baby in five years. SHE IS PLANNING TO HAVE HER TUBES TIED, since she says she has tried to be "careful"

⁸ The ever-increasing unnecessary operations will be dealt with in a later section.

and she WANTS TO ENJOY . . . WITHOUT WORRYING."—
Emphasis ours.

Admittedly, this woman is having her children too closely to possess the vitality to give them the strength of mind and body they should inherit. She is no doubt unable to take the proper care of them, though history indicates that the greatest of men and women came from large families where much self-denial was necessary, making them personally responsible individuals. In at least the larger cities there are clinics where natural methods are taught, and practically every family physician is capable of properly instructing such women in methods that are neither health, nor Soul destroying.

There is also a psychological law involved; one generally not foreseen by those who undergo such operations. Man obtains the greatest pleasures from indulgences which involve most risk; finding this risk removed as in the case of a de-sexed wife, there is no longer an attraction, and more often than not, he seeks other avenues for excitement, pleasure and satisfaction.

The woman, much in the same manner, but from another point of view—a natural one—recognizing that her husband is no longer a MAN, but a gross bundle of flesh, having lost his potential for godhood, soon finds the relationship of cohabiting with something that is not a man, disgusting. In both instances, the harmony of the family is destroyed, and the end result is divorce or worse.

Asiatics Falling Victims to Their Own Diabolical Propaganda

According to an accredited news dispatch:

"Hong Kong (AP)—Communist China has legalized *abortion and sterilization* and ordered a sweeping campaign to introduce contraception among its 600 million people.

"The New China News Agency reported the about-face in policy Wednesday. It said the order was issued by

the Health Ministry three weeks ago solely as a health measure."

Natural contraceptive methods are indicated in countries and among people who breed more or less like animals, and where it is practically impossible to raise enough food to keep the people in health. Or, as already stated, in instances where the family is already large enough to be properly supported, or the health of the woman such as to make further childbearing undesirable.

AS A MATTER OF FACT, IT IS RECOGNIZED BY THINKERS AND RESEARCHERS, IF AMERICA CONTINUES TO PERMIT IMMIGRATION OF UNDESIRABLES WHOLLY LACKING THE SPIRIT OF AMERICANISM, THEN SHORTLY WE WILL BE IN LIKE POSITION THAT CHINA, INDIA AND JAPAN NOW FIND THEMSELVES.

However, to legalize abortion—a crime against Nature and God—is endorsing murder; is wholly Asiatic in concept, and second only to sterilization in debasement.

Sterilization, as already pointed out, makes of the victims less than humans. It destroys all that has been developed by Nature and design during the past 50 million years. It reduces the once almost animal-like creature who has become a god of creation, to the sub-animal—a human in form, less than an animal in mind and Spirit.

THIS IS WHAT THE ENEMIES OF GOD AND MAN INTEND TO MAKE OF ALL BUT A FEW OF OUR OWN RACE, and *will* SUCCEED UNLESS AMERICANS AROUSE THEMSELVES OUT OF THE LETHARGY INTO WHICH THEY HAVE PERMITTED THEMSELVES TO FALL, AND TAKE ACTIVE STEPS TO CIRCUMVENT THESE VICIOUS DESIGNS.

Little did we think when the above was written that our findings and conclusions would be verified so soon by surgeons of reputation.

Needless Demands for Surgery by American Women Deplored
By Patricia McCormick

Harrisburg Evening News, March 3, 1958, we quote in part:

"New York (INS)—The director of the American College of Surgery says increasing numbers of American women are undergoing needless surgery *at their own demand.*

"In an interview, Dr. Paul R. Hawley condemned this practice of 'operation by demand' and described American females as 'pushovers' for surgery — needless and otherwise.

"He stated hysterectomies¹ and appendectomies are the two most popular 'demand' operations.

"CONSCIENTIOUS hospitals and surgeons are trying to crack down on needless surgery through the establishment of 'tissue committees.' These groups examine parts removed during surgery to determine if the operation was justified.

"To be accredited by the Joint Commission on Hospital accreditation, a hospital must have such a watch-dog committee. Not all hospitals do.

"Why would a woman demand an operation with all its pain, inconvenience and potential danger?

Some years ago:

"The United Mine Workers medical program was

¹ As pointed out, our experience along the West Coast indicates, by the confessions of those who consulted us, that their main reason was not based so much on the desire for such an operation, but that it would free them from the possibility of pregnancy, and permit unlimited cohabitation minus all fears, with no possibility of exposure of illicit relations. Since then we have learned to our regret that the West Coast is not the only section of the country where this practice is general.

threatened with financial ruin because any doctor could order an operation. The rate of hysterectomy operations in mining towns was found to be fantastically high and largely responsible for an unnatural financial drain."

CHAPTER SEVEN

Section One

Not All Physicians Endorse the Tribal Rite of Circumcision

Following the publication and circulation of the first edition of THE AGE OF TREASON, we were mailed a clipping of an article published in England's leading conservative Medical Journal, *The Lancet*, written by Daniel Whiddon, M.D. We thoroughly agree with everything said by Dr. Whiddon, and wish the entire article might be read by every American mother and father. We take the liberty of quoting from this article, offering reasons why this operation should NOT be performed. and giving full credit to Dr. Whiddon and *The Lancet*.

"The human prepuce is the representative in man of the sheath in other mammals—a *covering protection* of the glans, which is (an integral part) of generation.

". . . under appropriate stimulation it is capable of receiving pleasurable sensations¹ that, when they have reached a certain pitch of intensity, TAKE CHARGE OF THE WHOLE BEHAVIOR² of the individual and lead to a

¹ This sensation is of the highest importance to the normalizing of both the physical portion of man as well as a balancing of the mental and emotional nature. Up to a late period it was held *in toto* that a man was not fully a man if the means to this experience was destroyed either by accident or surgery, and serious students of the *incentives to action* still hold to this idea.

² This is true in its relation not only to the pleasure of the experience, but it influences either for good as in deep affection, upon the mind and the emotional nature, and; Spiritually, on the Soul of man, an experience impossible to both participants

series of uncontrollable [as intended by Nature] actions that complete the MOST IMPORTANT FUNCTION IN THE LIFE-CYCLE OF THE INDIVIDUAL. . .³

"The preservation, undulled and undiminished, of this *special sense* and the guarding of the mucous membrane in which it resides from constant exposure and a *dulling of its sensibility*, IS OF PARAMOUNT IMPORTANCE FROM THE POINT OF VIEW OF THE SURVIVAL OF THE RACE. This, then, is the biological purpose of the prepuce.

"The human prepuce is neither vestigial nor useless. It is an [integral] part of the normal [natural] mechanism of reproduction, and without it final satisfaction⁴ is to some extent blunted and the performance of a natural act unsatisfactory.

Actually, WHY do some physicians recommend the operation?

"How often is circumcision necessary on surgical grounds?

"Does routine circumcision do any good?

—the man and women so engaged—if there has been such an operation.

³ This experience—feeling and sensation—is essential to a balancing of man's three-fold nature: physical, mental and Spiritual, bearing in mind that God created all things *for a specific purpose* and *no man has ever been able to improve upon God's handiwork, even to that which concerns man's physical well-being*.

⁴ It is the conclusion of many who have made a thorough study of the subject that the female engaged in coitus with a male who has had this operation performed, *is never wholly satisfied, is mentally, physically impressed of something missing, and that this has a profound reflex action on her mind, emotions and nervous system, frequently leading to some form of neurosis*.

"What should be the attitude of doctors toward the first step in surgical handicraft."

Dr. Whiddon called the operation "BARBARIC." Part of its history can be traced. Much for its practice as a tribal religious custom is clearly outlined in the Bible. The *inner* concept was taught by all earlier *Arcane Fraternities*.

"It is part of the ritual of mutilation by which the young male, and less often the female (in many non-Nordic races) was called upon to suffer and give proof of courage by which they were (are) admitted to the privileges of the tribe or the estate of manhood or womanhood.

"It . . . must be grouped with the various forms of tribal markings. . . . It is also performed to reduce lusty desires, (and under the belief) that it will make a man a better warrior for his tribe, a more faithful husband, a less frequent disturber of the harmony of society. . . ."

It was a first step in the system for final emasculation of captives in war, that they might be trusted with the women of their captors; or slaves who would render better service to their masters, their minds being free from lascivious ideas.

"The distribution of [the practice] circumcision over the surface of the globe is irregular, AND ALL CAN BE TRACED TO THE INFLUENCE OF RACE, THE CONQUEROR IMPOSING THE PRACTICE ON HIS SUBJECTS."

In America it is becoming a fetish among "brain-washed" surgeons thus involving great numbers of Gentiles not traditionally governed by tribal-religious customs. It is not generally recognized that it is an ancient concept of the first step toward the enslavement of a people.

How often is circumcision necessary on surgical grounds as a guard to health?

"Circumcision in the adult should be performed when there is an actual diseased condition. The infant prepuce (in most instances) cannot be retracted with force and SHOULD NOT BE RETRACTED; retraction becomes normal in the years of childhood, without any material or medical assistance, and by puberty the non-retractable prepuce occurs in less than one in a hundred. I have never seen one in my 50 years of medical practice. True PHIMOSIS—that is, the prepuce without a fibrous structure at the orifice—is present in perhaps one in a thousand.

"The reasons advanced in favor of circumcision in infancy are a strange mixture of taboos handed down from the dawn of history, of Biblical precepts (dealing mostly with the Jewish race and for specific reasons), of midwives' and old wives' medicine, and of the unthinking advice of THOSE STOREHOUSES OF UNEXPECTED TRADITIONS, THE SURGICAL TEXT-BOOKS.

"The very shaky basis of the arguments in favor of wholesale circumcision is often statements themselves unsupported by any scientific evidence, *i.e.*, that the circumcised are less liable to disease, particularly venereal disease and cancer.

"The first statement is not based on fact. In the middle East in World War II, our circumcised allies were the most enthusiastic supporters of the v.d. departments. The second is true only to the extent that cancer usually starts in the prepuce near the corona. But cancer here is a very rare disease. Five thousand men die every week in England, and only four of them die of penile cancer.

"Apart from the evil results which are due to imperfect workmanship, there are the fairly common minor troubles that follow because a stupid and unnecessary operation has been performed; a normal mechanism

[created by One who found His handiwork perfect]⁵ has been destroyed, and a delicate surface has been exposed to the air and friction four or five years *before it should have been exposed.*

"Eczema of the glans and meatus is not rare in the newly circumcised infant; it needs careful treatment . . . and sometimes leads to a carring and narrowing of the meatus.

"These are the facts. But we must not break our hearts by putting too much of them into a fruitless crusade against infantile circumcision.

"Nonetheless, let us keep our own sanity. When we meet a young mother whose mind is still her own⁶ and not someone else's gramophone record, let us ask her if she thinks it likely that Nature (not to mention God) would bring 1,000 English children into the world every day, *well formed in all respects except this one;* if it is more

⁵ There are religious groups who hold it not only sinful, but sacrilegious, to have this operation performed, unless it is absolutely necessary. They maintain that the Creator's handiwork cannot be improved upon, and that every organ in man's body is for a specific purpose. Moreover, that a man is *not a man* [whole-y] who has had this operation. Certain *Arcane Societies* of a Spiritual nature with large memberships, agree with them. Naturally the atheist and unbeliever will scoff at them.

⁶ Despite the increasing atheism, especially among those who feel themselves and their acts governed by science, there is also an increasing number who the more firmly believe in Nature, and a God who existed ages before man, and through whose influence or direction man reached his present state of physical and mental perfection. These look forward to an *Age of God*; that is, of the *Spirit*, when those who live within Nature's and God's Law will attain to the life that is perpetual. These *will not permit* such invasion of the perfect law unless there is a diseased state that must be corrected.

likely that Nature is right, than the tribal and folklore medical theories that tries to improve on her, is wrong.

"And when, as many often must, we are forced to give way to folly for the sake of peace of mind—our own, that of the mother, that of the school doctor—let us be honest—and not commit the sin against the Holy Ghost by concealing from ourselves, that we are partners to folly."—*Emphasis and interpolation ours.*

As the knowledge of what the Militant Socialists and enemies of mankind propose to do for the degeneracy, the deterioration of the minds of the people, the idea—the fear—is gaining that the increasing tendency, the urging to circumcision, is merely a *mental softening up* process for enforced castration which is openly advocated for the many, by those making every effort for the subjugation of the masses.

Prior to about 1700, at the time when Primitive Masonry began to be changed into Speculative Masonry, no one who had been circumcised was accepted into that or any of the other Christian secret societies and fraternities. Almost the first question asked of the candidate was: "Are you whole of body?" The question followed by the demand of proof. A man was not considered as "whole" if he had been circumcised. This is still true in some of these societies, where circumcision is considered as the Divine edict separating the Christian from the Jew as regards being a "full" man. After 1700 this was changed to "*are you whole of limb?*" by the greater number of the fraternities and societies.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Section Two

Darkest Africa, Back to the Biblical "Beast". When the Cultured Scientific Mind Begins to Retrogress There is No Certainty of the Depth Its Deterioration Will Reach

Little did Dr. Harrower, who may well be called the Father of Endocrinology or Organ Therapy, realize that within a comparatively short time the use of glandular extracts in the treatment of many diseases would digress into a practice more degrading than that of the natives of darkest Africa.

Practically everyone who is familiar with the practices of these natives is fully informed that they have, possibly for ages, believed that eating the vital (generative) organs of those they took prisoners imbued them with the strength and powers of their victims. It must however be said in their favor, that they consumed the various organs while the flesh and these organs were still fresh.

Whether or not the first Organ Therapists were familiar with this practice and based their therapy on it, no one will ever know. They did learn by one means or another, that the Endocrines *from animals*, fresh or properly prepared, had a potent effect upon the weakened organs in the human being, and brought about the cure of many diseases, notably in women, and weaknesses in man, and were especially potent in Neurotic diseases.

Dr. Harrower, greatest and most natural of those who taught the practice of Endocrinology to physicians, made a practice of obtaining the various fresh glands from animals, and by a special process which assured the full strength of the glands,

prepared tablets and/or liquids. Later pharmaceutical houses, for some reason, dried these glands before processing, thus losing much of their virtue.

Lest the laity reading this become concerned at the use of these various glands, they should understand that there is not the slightest difference between taking these processed glands as medicine and the consuming of animal flesh, especially the heart, liver, sweetbreads and brain of animals, which millions consider a delicacy. In fact, if anything, these glandular extracts are far to be preferred because they are purified, the ureas and toxins having been removed before being made into medical products.

Now, after only a short time since the beginning of the use of glandular substances, the practice has *degenerated into* something far beyond the comprehension of the normal mind; beyond anything ever conceived by the natives of darkest Africa, or their Voodoo doctors, as indicated by a news item:

Hormone from DEAD Aids Dwarfs to Grow
Daily News, March 28, 1958:

"Cambridge, Mass., March 29, (AP).—A hormone collected from the *brains of the dead persons* is making dwarfed children grow, a physician reported today. A 13-year-old girl who was only the size of a 6-year-old, grew nearly an inch in six weeks—as much as she had been growing in a full year. Yet she was given only an infinitesimal amount of the hormone.¹

¹ Every long experienced endocrinologist is fully aware that there are hormones which will greatly enhance the growth of children, especially retarded children. These Endocrines not only stimulate the growth of the body, but greatly benefit the mind as well, often stopping short Mongolism, and bringing about mental normalcy. These glandular substances are as natural as the meats people eat, and are from animals, and not from the human dead, i.e., *Ghoulism*, a term that has horrified

"Others Also Aided

"Two other youngsters of the same age, dwarfed by natural failure to produce the hormones², are also benefitting, said Dr. Philip H. Henneman of Massachusetts General Hospital³ and Harvard Medical School.

Dr. Henneman said the hormone will help only dwarfs whose glands are failing to produce enough hormones.⁴ It will not help persons dwarfed because of other causes."

In other chapters we have given consideration to the methods confessedly pursued by Hitler, Stalin, the Marxists, brain-washed Americans, and foreign enemies of mankind in their efforts to destroy the minds of the mass, so that they may become the easy victims of those who seek to become their masters. However, nowhere has it been stated that any of these advocated *ghoulism* for any purpose whatever, especially where there are other agents which serve a much better purpose.

The race of men seems rapidly degenerating into a lesser animal kingdom. This cannot longer be contradicted when we read items such as this while the whole mass of normal human, God-believing men and women sit nonchalantly by without giving voice to vehement disapproval.

every normal human being in the past. The natural glandular extracts of animals properly treated, and prescribed, will do more than any amount of such extracts from the dead.

² There is no such thing as a "natural failure." Where there is a failure, there is a *cause*, and with this cause *removed* and natural treatment prescribed, normalcy is restored.

³ The question arises: Is it any wonder that people reading such items as these and still possessed of reason, are becoming more and more afraid to enter hospitals for treatment? It can also be the reason why institutions of higher(?) learning are being condemned by the mass.

⁴ This is true of all Endocrine treatment. It will help only in ailments where one or more of the glands are not functioning.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Section Three

The Rapid Trend Toward Animalism—Test Tube Babies—Babies to be Created Much Like Chicks Are Hatched—With Just About As Much Soul Artificial Insemination

"History repeats itself" has long been recognized as a truism. Whether constructive or destructive, all things follow an order or cycles.

According to Spiritual concepts, interrelationship must be other than purely carnal or sub-human, and be based on love or affection. Such relationship being *both* natural and Spiritual, it follows that any conception taking place as a result of carnal desire or unsanctified procedure, is unholy, outside of the *Divine Law*, and the result is not sanctioned by either *Natural* or *Divine Law*.

Conception by means of artificial insemination is catheterism—MARRIAGE BETWEEN WOMAN AND THE CATHETER—there is nothing Spiritual about it, and certainly it is not human. There cannot be love between woman and an instrument, and that which is conceived sub-humanly, and without love, is not God ordained and therefore Soulless.

It is questionable whether any moral, normal woman who requested, or accepted artificial insemination, investigated, and is aware of the devious procedures necessary to the collection of semen, or has the slightest idea that every Biblical injunction against Onanism, pollution and desecration is ignored; or even gave a thought to the plainly stated Scriptural injunction as to how children should be conceived if they are to receive "God's blessings," *i.e.*, a Soul.

God's command that children *must* be conceived in love between man and woman, or at least in affection, is entirely ignored. Even the child conceived in passion has a chance of humanness and Immortalization, and is far different than those born as a result of artificial insemination, a method so degrading it could not have been conceived by a normal healthy mind.

One of the great transgressions against God's law if you still believe in God; or against Nature's law if you do not, is *artificial insemination* advocated and practiced by those who believe in neither God, nor the human Soul. We have already dealt with this unhuman and Soul-degrading practice.

A next step rapidly followed, as revealed in a November 23, 1957 newspaper item mailed to us, name of newspaper unknown, with the heading:

"Parents of 2,057 May Order Special Test Tube Babies"

We are enlightenedly informed that:

"New York, (UP)—Dr. Hermann J. Muller, distinguished service professor at the Indiana University, predicts that the haphazard natural method¹ of birth and heredity that exists today will be eliminated in the next 100 years.

"Muller said women will still give birth, but there will also be methods of reproduction² that will be carried out chemically in the laboratories.³

¹ It is freely admitted that in all too many instances conception in the natural manner is both haphazardous and degrading. But it cannot be contradicted that during the millions of years since creation began, some mighty fine specimens were the result of this "natural method," if we are fair enough to judge what some of the men so brought into being have accomplished. It is also certain that if men had not interfered with God's and Nature's Laws as is now being done, Humanity would be much farther advanced, and conditions of life much nearer the ideal.

² This would not actually be a form of reproduction, but

"He said that mankind will 'feel' a social⁴ obligation to bring the best possible humans into the world⁴ instead of human beings which only mirror their parent's peculiarities.

of the creation of an entirely new specie, *neither human, nor with Soul or Spiritual essence*. It would be a creature, not a human being. It would not have a reasoning mind nearly as well developed as that of present day animals. It would have to be controlled in its activities as would an automaton.

³ We question whether Dr. Muller read William Somerset Maughan's book *The Magian*, wherein is described the actual method followed by a physician who was also a biologist, an endocrinologist, and above all, an alchemist. While the book is a novel, it is based on the experiments made by this physician. However, in this instance, the experiment was started with a human spermatozoon in a medium as nearly akin as was possible to that in which a foetus would develop in the uterus of a woman, in the same temperature and fed with the same elements it would absorb during natural gestation.

A creature somewhat in the form of a human being gradually developed, but as it approached the months when a child in the uterus would show activity, it began to show a viciousness never seen in human or animal, and the question arose: What to do with it? It is to be borne in mind that this creature was not altogether a laboratory product. Its life began in a test tube as nearly as possible approaching the conditions *en uterus*.

This is *not* a fairy tale. I personally can vouch for the truth of this story. I knew the man well and of his capacity as a research worker and an experimentalist. He confessed later that he believed that creatures with the human form might be developed in test tubes, but that the Human-Spiritual element would be missing, because there was no blending of the elements from which natural, thinking human creatures result. The creature would not only be Soulless, but mindless, and vicious as viciousness could be, far more so than the inharmonious blending which gives birth in nature of what are called "breeds."

⁴ This social obligation has always existed, and is an obligation placed on man by his Creator. It is not only a social obli-

The news report continues:

"Muller said the female productive cycle will be brought under control, the sex of unborn children will be prescribed at conception⁵ and multiple birth will be produced at will.⁵ It will be possible, he said, to foreorder⁵ identical or fraternal twins.

"In addition to artificial insemination, using the

gation, it is a moral-Spiritual Law; moreover, mankind has always had the means to bring into being human creatures that might be God-like, super men. Humanity, except in a few instances, has failed to do so even under the most favorable conditions, and during periods when men were fully conscious of a divinely given moral, Spiritual sense, founded in manhood and honor based on faith in God. Men in general having degenerated into immoral irresponsible, reprehensible, traitorous beings, what can be expected as a result of artificial creatures incorporating nothing more than the grossest material essences?

It is undoubtedly true that modern progeny mirror their parent's peculiarities. Accepting this as true, can we conceive that the experimentalists who believe in nothing but material creative science, would, or could, create something superior?

In passing, it is well to bear in mind that since before history was written, men, after attaining much in science, conceived the idea that as creators, and in power, they could supersede God, the Divine Creator, or call it the Creative Law, if you will. Fortunately, *they have always failed*. We will consider instances later.

⁵ Who will do the prescribing? At whose direction will multiple birth take place? Who will foreorder the identical twins? Is this what *Fichte* and *Russell* foresaw would be the lot of women when finally placed under the control of men without human feelings or inclinations? It would appear that these men saw clearly what would be the lot of humanity in general if Marxists, atheists and brain-washed American psychiatrists were to gain control over humanity.

sperm of selected individuals of high personal⁶ traits, reproduction completely detached from the human body was prophesied by Muller.⁷ This will be made possible by increasing the ovum and sperms of outstanding individuals.

"From these reproductive cells, PERHAPS FROM PARENTS LONG DEAD, SCIENTISTS WILL PRODUCE IN THE LABORATORY OF PREDICTABLE HERITAGE WHO CAN BE REARED WITHOUT THE PREJUDICES OF IMMEDIATE PARENTAL INFLUENCE.⁸

In the following statement is the KEY to *your own* and *your children's future*. It will be well to take heed and see to it that the Marxists and One Worlders never come into power:

⁶ Would any *man of high personal traits willingly become a part* of the immoral practice required to obtain these sperms? Any man willing to Biblically "pollute" himself would hardly be the person to help bring into being a highly developed human creature.

⁷ We question whether the parents of America have the slightest inkling of what is being taught and "drilled" into the minds of their sons and daughters, and what the future results will be of such inculcations. The great Tolstoi commanded: "*Bethink yourself*" and it would be highly desirable for the parents to take this command to heart, and not only bethink themselves, but investigate what is actually being taught in our schools and colleges. If they fail to do so they will be equally guilty with those into whose care they intrust their offspring.

⁸ This will no doubt be true for the reason that these creatures will be zombies, without reason and without Souls; creatures to be directed in the same manner we now direct machines, but with the difference that being vicious, they would have to be watched, or confined during what would ordinarily be rest periods.

"People of proven worth [those chosen] WILL THUS BE ALLOWED⁹ INCREASED NUMBER OF DESCENDANTS.

Not all men are blind. There is a newsletter called the *Don Bell Reports*, which clearly indicates this awakening:

"All the destructions of civilization seem to follow a distinct and never-changing pattern. First came the perversion of the Spiritual life of the people; the substitution of materialism with its worship of the power of money; next came the [urge, almost command] mongrelization of Universalism: one people, one religion, one money, one government and one world [the pattern: Babylon]. Finally, [perhaps happily for the people as a whole] total destruction of [what was once a] civilization through direct intervention of God as through a flood of Noah's time, or the fires of Sodom and Gomorrah.

"The impending destruction of the Christian civilization is [may not be] different, though the *causes* which have their affect [REACTION] . . . may make it appear more complicated."

"Muller also described the possibility of laboratory parthenogenesis—conception and birth without the use of the male sperm as has already been accomplished in female frogs.¹⁰ He said this eliminates the random choice

⁹ *Fichte and Russell* saw well the shadows of what was to happen in the future, and read them aright. In the words "*Will thus be allowed*" is the clear indication that the mass, as a whole, will have less freedom of action, than the present animals in the fields. These, fellow Americans, are the teachings your children are receiving in schools and colleges of higher(?) learning. This will be their concept of life, and *they will be brain-washed with the idea that they will be among the masters that will control humanity in the future.*

¹⁰ The example is a poor one—a slip—. Frogs are of the lowest form of creatures insofar even as *instinct* is concerned, with

of characteristics from two individuals and would improve the race.

"These are genetic sputniks"¹¹ he said. 'But I think the world will have to be a united community¹² by the time these predictions become a reality. For if one nation could put these developments to use, it could raise its citizens¹³ to such a high level of capability in several decades as to make itself invincible.

"In one hundred years, living things of 'the simplest types'¹⁴ will be produced in laboratories from inanimate materials, he said."—*Emphasis and Interpolations ours.*

Legends and Actualities

Modern atheistic scientists, one worlders, and a certain class of psychiatrists do *not* believe in God, and certainly not in legends, though no legend exists, or can exist, unless based in fact. Certainly none of these believe in the Legendary story of Atlantis, despite the fact that **AT THIS VERY MOMENT WE ARE**

not a shadow of intelligence. They are also weak in the way of any self-defense.

¹¹ This is well stated for our purpose. See later section in this chapter.

¹² Another statement revealing the intent. This clearly points out the Marxist idea of *one world*. All but a few will be slaves in that one world; a world in which the common man, if he has any intelligence, may not have an opinion if he desires to survive.

¹³ This has reference to the few who would be the directors of the masses in all of their activities; masters of the slaves. It would assure direction of the people who would be constantly controlled.

¹⁴ Another candid revelation. Everything will be of the "simplest type," the creature before his evolvement toward the human being, minus mind, reason and Soul.

EXACTLY WHERE ATLANTIS WAS IN THE HEYDAY OF HER GLORY.

The people of Atlantis, or rather, her scientists, had attained to the highest achievement. They had mastered the elements enabling them to use what we now call the atom, to "sail" wherever they pleased. Her motive power was such, and put to such use, that labor was nominal, and as is now taking place with us, idleness led to all manner of vices, immorality and degradation. Still they were not satisfied.

THEY WANTED ONE THING MORE. THEY WANTED TO BE GOD, and like our plan of "sailing to the moon," they arranged to "sail" into the heavens and REPLACE GOD. They prepared for it, but the Bible tells us *no man has seen God and no mortal man shall*, and when they made their final test, THE "HEAVENS FELL" and Atlantis was no more.

The next legend, written as a truth, an actual occurrence, was the experience of Noah. Every one who has ever read the Bible, or attended church, is familiar with this story.

Then we have the story of the *Tower of Babel*. This is the KEY to all that has occurred, come upon man, or that he *brought upon himself*.

Again man had accomplished, or achieved all but reaching into heaven and dethroning God, but after they had proceeded to great heights, *confusion came upon them* and THEY WERE NO LONGER ABLE TO PROCEED WITH SIMPLE CONSTRUCTION WORK. This is the story of man's fall when he becomes so conceited that he either no longer believes in God, or *believes he can replace God*, OR IN THE CREATION OF CREATURES SUPERIOR TO THOSE BORN UNDER THE LAWS OF GOD and/or NATURE.

Finally, and for which we have history, there was the might and greatness of Egypt. Once again man had achieved mightily and moved next as to God, but this did not satisfy him. He wanted to replace God, take over God's reign. He prepared

for it and the experience similar to that of the "tower of Babel" was repeated. Men's minds, great as they were, *became confused*. They were no longer able to read their own texts, they could no longer discuss their science with each other, total confusion began to reign, and mighty as was Egypt, great its reign, Egypt fell and its descendants can not even read the hieroglyphics on the remains of her mighty, glorious and beautiful temples, and know nothing of the science by which Egypt became great.

Now, at last we are again just where was Atlantis and the land of Noah before the flood, the builders of the Tower of Babel. Every effort is being made by our scientists, and by our enemies to *fly into the heavens*; to prepare instruments that will destroy countries and races. The prophesy is: RUSSIA WILL NEVER USE SUCH INSTRUMENTS OR FORCES OF DESTRUCTION. Scientists will never create zombies. Mankind as a whole will not be enslaved. VERY SOON ALL THOSE SO ENGAGED WILL MEET WITH THE SAME FATE AS DID THE BUILDERS OF THE TOWERS OF BABEL, THE MIGHT OF EGYPT. MENTAL CONFUSION WILL COME UPON MEN SO ENGAGED, AND THEY WILL NO LONGER BE ABLE TO READ THEIR OWN CHARTS, NOR MAKE USE OF THE INSTRUMENTS THEY HAVE PREPARED TO CONQUER THE MASSES FOR THEIR OWN SELFISH PURPOSES.

All history and legends show that the minds of men, however brilliant they may be, *are capable of functioning only to a certain point beyond the laws of order and universal harmony, then confusion results.*

CHAPTER SEVEN

Section Four

The Proposed Sperm Bank—The Devil's Children

Throughout the ages when men conceived of an *evil* thing which they did not have the manhood or hardihood to face, they likewise found a ready excuse for committing, or permitting, that evil. During the past ten years, men(?) have conceived of more evil methods for the debasement, degradation and demoralization of both physical and mental deterioration of their fellow men than in all ages past.

This had its beginning in America with the mental retrogression by means of education; physical and mental deterioration by means of Toxic substances in water and food for the mass; various drugs, serums and viruses, apparently for the welfare of the people, but actually for their destruction; mass breeding; artificial insemination, and now the *Sperm Bank*.

An article entitled SPERM BANK—*The Brutal Truth We Dare Not Face*, appeared in the magazine *Pageant*, January 1958.

This should have been titled: DEBASING, DEGRADING PRACTICES WHICH HONEST, MORAL MEN CANNOT CONCEIVE A REALITY—*The Devil's Children*.

Atomic fall-out and X-rays are made the excuse for a proposed procedure more destructive to man as *man*, than anything conceived of in the heyday of Sodom, Gomorrah, Niniveh or the Saphoists of Greece. It may be said of the evils of those periods, debasing as they were to individuals, at least no sub-human DEVIL'S CHILDREN, were conceived of to curse the world.

Naturally, in conjunction with the conception of the methods in mind, there is the basic reason, or cause, which gave

birth to such ideas. This is found in atheism; total lack in, or acceptance of the Spiritual possibilities of man; non-acceptance of the idea of God, with faith only in things seen and felt. To obtain a proper conception of the unholiness present day advocated, (mental unbalance) such as artificial insemination and sperm banks, one must possess a firm faith in God; in Spiritual concepts; in both Natural and *Divine Law*, and not only be able to fight these evils, but also be a Servant of God; more especially *Minister or Priest*.

That there might be progeny of normal mind, moral fiber, possessed of Spiritual concepts and operating under the *Divine Law*, God or the operating Creative Law, brought forth, not one, but TWO sexes of opposite nature to act as Co-Creators with HIM. Any general infringement upon this Law brings the punishment of extinction to man.

This Creative operating Law is in *absolute control* in the creation of man, for the reason that included with it, part of it, or in conjunction with it, there is not only in operation a physical act under Natural Law, but a Spiritual Law, in the form of love or affection; and this requires, commands, and damns those who attempt to set aside the Law.

The Natural Law, even if there were no God, nothing Spiritual, still demands the conjunction of both male and female in the woman's conception of a new being; otherwise, bereft of the potent influence of love and affection, a monster—a devil's child—Soulless, loveless, Spirituality lacking, morally bereft creature, *will be the result*.

We repeat: if there is no such thing as Spiritual verity, God or a human Soul; only the functioning of a Natural Law, the operation of which even atheistic scientists cannot deny, there would still be imposed, the same terrible penalty.

To quote Dr. Ralph L. Lapp, Atomic physicist, appearing before a Joint Congressional Committee on Atomic Energy, is stated as having said:

"After a careful examination of the scientific evidence, I am convinced that a national sperm bank is the only way the human¹ race can be preserved in some recognizable form² in the future.

The oft repeated statement that there is a "sperm bank" for animals does not apply, because animals have *no thinking, reasoning minds, no concept of love, no Spiritual feeling, no responsibility under the law*. Moreover, *it has been the experience of cattlemen that in many instances the female becomes barren after giving birth to three or four calves when artificial insemination is used.*

Furthermore, if there be actual need of a Sperm Bank to continue the race, it would imply that all men may, or will, become impotent, what then of a Sperm Bank? How long, under the most favorable circumstances would such sperms remain alive? There is still another factor, the uterus is homologous to the prostate in man, and the ovum subject to the same influences the sperm is in man, though not as sensitively, nor as quickly affected. CAN SCIENCE CREATE OVA, or bank them?

Dr. Lapp further stated that:

"The genetic future of humans is sealed in bundles of chromosomes which exist in every living cell. Each chromosome consists of rows of molecules called genes which determine our mental and physical traits.² It is the

¹ This statement mentioning the "human race" is contradicted by what follows: "*in some recognizable form.*" The recognition that it would be in "some recognizable form" indicates, if it does not plainly state, that it would not actually be what we now know as a "human" race; but instead, a sub-human race; *devil's children, Soulless, love and affection minus; lacking morality and in personal responsibility.*

² This is true, but when these "genes" are not "charged"

normal nature of these genes to change and separate. But radiation causes upsets in the chemical structure of the genes and, after exposure to radiation, they separate unnaturally.

"These unnatural gene separations may not affect our immediate offspring. But after several generations of multiplication and growth, the results will be felt by children who inherit these "unnatural" genes. These children will be mentally defective and physically malformed."³

"Each atomic explosion, whether it is a test bomb or actual warfare, increases the amount of radioactivity in the air. It does not have to be strong enough to penetrate our skins. We drink it in water; we eat it in the cheese that comes from cows that have eaten irradiated grass. Thus we cannot wait for future generations to take steps in their own behalf; they will have already been doomed. The responsibility is with us. Should the present male population become irradiated the die is cast.⁴

or "influenced" by the magnetic-electric interchange of the normal intercourse, they become unbalanced and lacking in human-Spiritual characteristics.

If one does not believe in God, or Spiritual verities, then let us say that offsprings by means of germ implantation will be less-human, or sub-human, lacking all that makes man a man—a vegetive creature that may display all the viciousness often found in "breeds."

³ This is precisely what will happen by breeding with sperms or *artificial insemination*. The *directive* influence, or operating Natural Law brings this about as a result of the *unnatural* procedure.

⁴ Unquestionably if *all* males became "irradiated" the *die of human creatures is cast*. But if this universal irradiation should take place, where would sperms be obtained for the bank, and what about the females? Certainly if the males' capacity to impregnate is destroyed, then radio activity would also be strong

Dr. Lapp continues:

"We must protect semen from harmful radiation. The only way to do this is to take the sperm now, before the male population is seriously irradiated. The semen should be refrigerated and kept in lead-covered Fort Knoxes and dispersed throughout the nation. Our concern is with the males, because the female sex cells are not as susceptible to radiation as those of the male.⁵

There are others who strongly oppose such an immoral, unmoral, unspiritual and non-human procedure as we do. Among these, as reported in *Pageant*, is Cardinal Francis Spellman, one of the great churchmen in America:

"The church has stood against all forms of artificial insemination and I do not see that there has been sufficient

enough to destroy the ovum, even though that is less sensitive. Moreover, accepting the possibility that sperms could be kept alive, it would be *far* more desirable that the race of man pass into the limbo of forgotten things, than that an earth be populated by vicious, sub-human creatures.

This concept that atomic forces will destroy the male's capacity to procreate, we are aware, is due to the fact that atomic energy is actually a form of *destructive fire*. The Bible, in which few scientists believe, does mention that as in the time of Noah, the creatures of the world, with few exceptions, were destroyed by water; so shall the next peoples of the world be destroyed by *fire*. Perhaps this prophesy was based on a fore-knowledge of man's destructive instinct, and that as in past events, he would again give way to evil and invent the means to an almost universal devastation. If such a thing is brought about, all but the "chosen" would be destroyed. If this happens it will be the viciousness in human nature that is responsible.

⁵ This justifies our conclusion that the female sex cell — the ovum, is susceptible, just as is the male cell, although it is not as sensitive as is the sperm. Again we question: What about a bank for ova?

reason to alter our position. This proposal will require detailed study, but it is my personal opinion that we will continue to oppose artificial insemination, regardless of the reason, for some time to come. Matter of fact, it would take a papal statement to alter our position and much more evidence of a clear and immediate danger is needed before that will be considered."

The Cardinal does not state his specific reasons for opposing a Sperm Bank, and the use to which it would be put, or the objection to artificial insemination, both of which would entail self-debasement, pollution and the Biblical condemned self-abuse on the part of the male, and as sinful in the part played by the female. No doubt the Cardinal's, and the church's objection would be somewhat similar to our own.

Dr. Norman Vincent Peale, Pastor of the New York Marble Collegiate Church, also voices his objections to such a procedure:

" 'This is a difficult problem,' Dr. Peale said recently. 'There are so many things to be considered. If it becomes a matter of certainty that future generations are doomed because of atomic fall-out, I may have to agree with Dr. Lapp.⁶ I hope it does not come to this. Our moral and social concept of the family turns on parents⁷ being *the* parents of their children. I am convinced artificial insemination will affect the status of the family'."

⁶ We feel that it is our privilege to disagree with this conclusion. It is our opinion that no Minister or Priest who is actually a servant of God, and who in his heart believes in the *Divine Law*, as well as in the Natural Law, would ever agree to the unrighteousness of an infraction of both Natural and *Divine Law*, for such is both artificial insemination, and the use of sperm in a Sperm Bank.

⁷ Once the family circle, basis of the organized human re-

Another objector to the idea, though not a very strong one, was Dean James Pike, of New York's Cathedral of St. John the Divine:

"Survival is paramount. If it comes to that, we will take steps. Lapp's proposal seems the most sensible to date."

Survival is under no consideration paramount. Human life is of but a few days, and the only reality in life is to look forward to a *greater* life. This would be impossible for the sub-human creature resulting from artificial insemination, whatever its form. We question whether the Rev. Doctor James Pike gave a thought to what he was saying, and if in conjunction with his remarks, he remembered the Biblical teachings on the subject of Love and Affection, as a result of which God's children are to be born. Admittedly, every man has a right to express his opinion; Priest and Minister as well as laymen.

In speaking of artificial insemination, Dr. E. Franklin Frazer, chairman of the Department of Sociology at Howard University is quoted as saying:

"After all, the wife has not committed adultery.⁸ This is the thing that causes family breakdown . . . when the wife or husband is in open adultery.⁹ Under Lapp's proposal, artificial insemination would be agreed upon. I don't see any moral or social violation."¹⁰

lationship, is destroyed, man will no longer be man as we know him at his best. He will return to a stage of savagery, far more vicious and unmoral than the savage of the prehistoric era, or if you will, pre-Christian time. During the earlier age he was unlettered, inexperienced, a slow thinking creature concerned only with his own comfort, and like the animals among whom he lived, of protecting his progeny, not because of love, affection or personal responsibility, but for the same reason the animals protect their young.

⁸ Considering all that is necessary in self-debasement, pol-

In discussing this article with a very prominent Minister who is truly in his heart a servant of God, believes in God, in His *Divine Law* as well as in the Natural moral law, he, after a moment's thought and with deep feeling, said: "If a woman of my church greatly desired to become a mother and her husband were impotent, and she forgot her marriage vows for a moment, I would offer a prayer for her and forgive her. Even though she had sinned, her child would be a natural one conceived under Natural Law.

"If however, she were guilty of artificial insemination, and all that is involved in obtaining the sperm against God's Law, all moral code, and finally there was the birth of a sub-human creature as a result of an act contrary to all things we have taught to hold sacred, I would not forgive her.

"As a Servant of the Most High God (or highest good) I believe that all who attempt evasion of the Law, will be subject to the serious and woeful REaction of Natural and *Divine Law*; the penalty being according to the nature of the desire and the gravity of the evil committed."

lution and a form of self-abuse, and the necessary procedure to be followed by the woman, it is inconceivable that any one, especially a Minister, can possibly feel that there is no moral or social violation. God's children are born as a result of a close relationship in an embrace, the incentive of which is love, or at least affection, and in accordance with Divine and Natural Law. The "devil's children" are so-called because of man's grossness and evil acts, thinking only of things that can be seen and felt; of things offering a moment's satisfaction, here today and gone tomorrow; all because his Soul is asleep and he does not believe in God and His *exact justice*.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Section Five

Forty Thousand Unnaturally Conceived Babies

According to a press report printed in the *Tampa Sunday Tribune*, March 2, 1958, by Patricia McCormick, there are supposedly 40,000 Test Tube Babies in the United States:

"New York. (INS)—Some 40,000 American children owe their start in life to test tube science.

"Dr. Edmund Farris, director of the Institute for Parenthood¹ said in an interview that even his estimate of '30,000 to 40,000 test tube tots' may be low.

"Dr. Allen D. Holloway, Chicago lawyer, in a recent issue of the *American Bar Association*, said that legislators should study the problem and adopt some uniform statutes. He warned:

" 'The act of artificial insemination involves criminal

¹ The term "parenthood" indicating parents, is an error. There is actually, according to both Divine and Natural Law, but one parent, and, religiously-Spiritually speaking, that one parent is guilty of breaking every law by which mankind should be governed; not because of a desire to become a mother, but because of the *unnatural* method pursued. One has a perfect right to have a desire. One may desire diamonds, but there is a legal way to obtain them, and many illegal, unlawful ways. The desire for a child is governed by the same Law as every other human desire. Deny this, and there is *no* Law; no God; no difference between governing man or animal, *with the exception that animals, however low on the scale of evolution, are governed by Nature's Law*, except when unduly domesticated or when they become pawns of "science."

law, legitimacy,² inheritance, negligence, malpractice and even spills over into the fields of theology,³ sociology and philosophy'."

The degree to which human beings, created in the image of their Creator, can descend, was amply verified in the report from London and printed in the *Daily News*, January 23, 1958, under the caption:

"Eva Bartok's Love⁴ Child Can Call Test Tube Papa

"Milford Haven, first cousin of Prince Phillip, husband of Queen Elizabeth II, had been suggested by many

² There can be no marriage between the syringe or whatever instrument is used, and the woman desiring and requesting its use, hence the child under civil law, and religious concepts, cannot be other than illegitimate. Aside from the legal sanctions of civil law, it is against every Spiritual precept which ordains that coitus between man and woman must be in affection or love, to have the sanction of the Divine Law, otherwise its creation is more or less the result of sex satisfaction, hence animalistic. Set aside the Spiritual and religious Law which governs such relationship between man and woman, and there will be no Law, and man descends to below the level of the animals who, without man's reasoning power, obey the laws of their nature. If such children are to be legitimized, then marriage and children born in wedlock, become a mockery before God and man.

³ In this matter of test-tube babies we speak as a Minister, a servant of God; one who still believes firmly in God, in a *Divine Law*, and a Natural Law, and that all who attempt to evade these laws will be repaid tenfold by the reaction of such attempted evasion.

Once the church condones this practice then it places its approval on the Biblically condemned practices of onanism, self-satisfaction, and pollution, on the part of man, and evasion on the part of woman of everything man held sacred. There are then no longer any cardinal sins. "Do what thou wilt," will be the law.

unusually well informed sources . . . as the father⁵ of Eve's daughter. . . .

Mary: "Hello Elsie, how is the baby coming along?

Elsie: "Doing fine, growing, happy, and nothing appears to interest or bother him."

Mary: "Who is the father?

Elsie (absentmindedly): "Oh, why Tom. . . . It was wonderful!"

Shortly every illegitimate child may become a "tube" baby; every "affair" a scientific one.

Did a Physician Check and Approve This Conclusion?

"According to . . . source [of information], the motive behind the test tube birth was simple. Eve is one of those unlucky women who is unable to have a baby by normal methods."⁶

⁴ How in the name of all that is sane, moral and that which all men and women considered *most holy—love*—can such a child be called a "love child" when/if there has been no affectionate relationship between the woman and the man from whom the "seed" had been most *unholily* obtained? If there can be any feeling of love between a woman, irrespective of her desires, and an instrument, then it is certain that man has been, throughout all time, an animal with most foolish and senseless ideas. Are sane, sensible, moral men and women ready to admit this, that God is a mockery, and they the victims of such mockery?

⁵ If in the future, Society which was once the arbiter of human action and relationship, is or is to become, gossiping centers where unholy relationships between men and women are to be discussed without qualms of conscience, then humanity is in a sorrowful plight. This was strongly brought home to us in a clinic for women, hearing without intent, the conversation between two women, as noted.

⁶ Is there other than a "normal" method of giving birth to a child? The method of conception may be different, may be

"A birth induced by artificial insemination can cure this condition,⁷ and make possible future normal births, specialists have discovered.⁷

"Eve was married four times, first at sixteen. . . . It was said to be an exclusive Mayfair doctor, with his own private midtown nursing home, who proposed the test tube method to Eva. That, the sources say, is why she refused to confide the full story of Deanna Grazia's birth. The name of the donor is a well-kept secret."

To Return to Forty Thousand Test Tube Babies

"Dr. Farris, like his colleagues in the field, thus operates in a legal-no-man's land.⁷

"He [Dr. Farris—and others so engaged] is conscious of religious thinking,⁸ but as he puts it: 'I see nothing wrong in trying to bring children of fine quality⁹ into the world'. . . .

natural or *unnatural*, but the coming "into the world" is the usual manner.

⁷ What manner of specialists are these who claim the artificial insemination can cure any condition? What is the object of such assertion? Artificial insemination, with *honest intention*, has only one purpose in mind, *conception when perhaps otherwise impossible*, and is not a cure for anything.

⁷ The term "*No Man's land*" is certainly applicable. If there is any truth in the Bible and Nature's Laws relative to the generation of men—from *before conception* to birth—then this procedure does not belong to the realm of *men*, but to beings below the level of the animals in the field.

⁸ We respectfully question whether Dr. Farris's "religious thinking" is based on his study of the Bible relative to mating, coitus, conception, and all that is involved in peopling the world with natural, normal children according to Natural and *Divine Law*. It might be well for him to check up on this.

⁹ Who is there able to tell whether these children are of

"We select a donor who matches the father in everything but blood. Color of hair and eyes is the same. We even consider BUILD AND RELIGION.¹⁰

"Dr. Farris recently surveyed 160 couples who have had test-tube babies. He said that all indicated they would prefer to have more children *via* artificial insemination.¹¹

"One of the families replying has had three test-tube children. Ten of the families also had children that were biologically 100 per cent their own. Some of these reported that the test-tube child was considerably brighter than their own children.¹²

"Once the biological material has been obtained from a donor, scientists like Dr. Farris, a veterinarian,¹³ pass

fine quality? It is too soon for any of these so conceived children to manifest their real character. We maintain our position as stated in the beginning of this chapter.

¹⁰ This last statement we question. A man to "have" religion must certainly have studied the Bible, and must know something of sexual purity. Is it possible for a "religious" man who has knowledge of Natural and *Divine Law* to undergo the *unholy* procedure necessary to obtain the "seed" for this purpose? Let the Servants of God answer this question. Doctors generally are too "practical."

¹¹ Might one question, upon what is their marriage based? What about having children conceived in love and affection *overshadowed by God*? On what basis is coitus between these couples? Do they know anything of true human nature as harmonized by Natural and *Divine Law*? Doctors, Ministers and the laity must sooner or later face these questions.

¹² If these parents had children previously in the natural Divinely ordained manner, what was the reason to change to the test tube method? This should have an answer based on fact. The test as to brightness and normalness will come later.

¹³ If there is no naturalness nor normality in the entire procedure, there certainly is in a *veterinarian—an animal husbandman—obtaining the "seed" for the purpose desired*. This is

it on to the physician who is caring for the woman in each case.

"... the couple involved is instructed to be intimate before and after the test-tube procedure.¹⁴

"This, according to a leading obstetrician, leaves the matter of the "real" father open to speculation.¹⁵

"If a question comes up later,¹⁶ *who* is to say that the Lawful husband didn't contribute¹⁶ biologically to the new life?"—*Emphasis ours.*

There is still remaining some sanity among men; men who are morally clean and imbued with Christian attributes.

According to published reports, neither the American Medical Association, the American Bar Association, nor the Pope, head of the Catholic church endorse or sanction this desecration of both God's and Nature's Law, and the denial of Souls to human bodies. Those seriously interested should obtain a copy of *The Tampa Tribune*, October 12, 1958.

no reflection on veterinarians generally; we are thinking only of the Natural and *Divine Law* evaded in the procedure.

¹⁴ Why so? Is there a possibility of a sense of guilt? What must be the state of mind—mere speculation on our part—of the husband during the intimacy, knowing what is to follow?

¹⁵ If there is such a possibility of a *natural* conception, why is the test tube method resorted to? What real reason can there be? What an opportunity for those millions of women who—confessedly—"cast their eyes outside of the family circle," without the slightest possibility of illicit relationships provable, as hinted at by the Chicago Attorney.

¹⁶ And there you have the answer. One thing is certain, this problem will open up a new field of jurisprudence for the legal profession, and force the men of religious service to take an open stand, either for God, Natural and *Divine Law*, or Baphomet and his law: "Do what thou wilt, shall be the (my) Law."

CHAPTER EIGHT

Which Is It?

Merely Integration, or Enforced Integration — Intermarriage—Miscegenation—Mongrelization?

Is it not in fact the intent to *force* men, irrespective of race or color, to mix first in general affairs, then socially, and finally in Godless marriages? If there is justice in this, then the hod carrier, as good a man as he might be and a white man, would be within his rights to force the "400" to accept him as their equal in their exclusive clubs.

Our intent is not to approve or disapprove integration, but to indicate conditions to which it will inevitably lead; miscegenation, mongrelization and the degradation that this has led to throughout the ages, ending in the downfall of every race that *permitted* it. With the exception of Portugal in the past, America is the only nation that is resorting to force.

Cultured, educated Negroes in high positions recognize this danger to their own race and are outspoken against racial integration.

Dr. Joseph W. Holley, Negro educator, founder of the Albany Bible and Manual Training Institute, which later became Albany State College, in an article published in *The Defender Magazine*, reporting an address delivered before the Georgia University Council, as early as 1935, said in part:

"There are those who would be glad to have the Southern white people and the Federal Government in bitter disagreement over this issue. And to have the Negroes of this country and especially in the South at loggerheads. There are explosive possibilities here which

would benefit *only* any who are interested in our confusion and *final destruction*.

Communist Blueprint

"All of these powerful agencies are sponsoring and putting into effect the seven points of Communism¹ which are as follows:

"1. Abolish the whole system of racial discrimination. Full race equality.²

"2. Abolish all laws which result in segregation.³

"3. Abolish all laws that disfranchise Negroes.⁴

"4. Abolish all laws that prevent the mixing of the Negro race in the public schools.

"5. Full admittance of Negroes in railroad stations, waiting rooms, restaurants, hotels and theatres.

"6. Abolish Jim Crowism in the Army and Navy.

"7. Abolish all laws preventing Negroes from enjoying all the rights and privileges in all forms of labor and industries.

"It is one of the Satanic marvels of our generation, that this Communistic conceived plan should have been

¹ Whether they are aware of it or not, organizations and the Church working for integration are *not* actually helping the Negro, but the Communists.

² This would not really require desegregation and could be brought about in a peaceful manner.

³ Throughout the ages there have been organizations, clubs and groups which were selective, thus discriminating against others not desired or unfitted.

⁴ It is undisputable that it would work to the benefit of the majority if there were strict selective Laws which would not permit the unfit or unprepared to vote. It is certain this would work toward a better class of representatives. There are admittedly *many* of the various races, not merely the Negro, wholly unfit to vote.

accepted by certain leaders of the political parties, to the detriment of both races. Those who developed the scheme⁵ could see ahead and knew the end result would be racial hate, upon which they thrive. Negroes who "grab the bait" will suffer [most] in the end.

"Granted that there are maladjustments affecting Negroes as well as *poor whites*⁶ in the South, we do not need Communists to tell us how to run our business and solve our problems.

"More Christian love and brotherly understanding of

⁵ It is to be constantly borne in mind that neither Moscow nor Israel subscribe to these articles of action.

⁶ What about the rest of the "whites" in America? The effect of the Fair Practice Act; the Civil Rights Law; the Mental Health Legislation, upon the entire white population? Apropos to this subject, perhaps the most direct and important statement made is that of *Warner & Swasey Company: America's Future*, May 15, 1959.

"How much federal aid did the Pilgrims get? They were in a depressed Area. *No one* guaranteed them high prices for anything. Their *only* roads and schools were built by *themselves*. *For Security they did their own saving, or starved.*

All they had was Character. All they did was work. All they wanted was self respect.

The sum total of these three traits became America. (The America before 1915.)

"But what's going to be the sum of the traits you see today—the traits of character, or, rather, *lack of it*, that demand more money for less work, put security *above* self-respect, pamper self-pitying criminals instead of *punishing* them, give away resources we desperately need ourselves; listen to weaklings that *want government to take care of them when they should (and could) take care of themselves?*

"Long years of early-American self-respect and hard work (without asking, expecting or receiving favors) built America but the traits you see today and can (will) destroy it . . ." Emphasis ours.

difficulties on both sides of the fence, would do no harm at this stage. Coercion {force is not the answer} is carrying forward the Communist plan and can only bring injury, even if clothed with judicial authority granted by the Supreme Court.

The Constructive Approach

"What the Negro needs is SELF-improvement made possibly by greater economic opportunities.⁷ He needs the kind of education that will fit him to hold down better jobs and make constructive contributions to society through honest and productive toil. *Merit produces its own reward* [irrespective of the color of a man's skin].

"Economic betterment will place the Negro in a position [as it will millions of white men] to demand solution of his problems *on the basis of achievement*. And to this NO white person will object."

Another well known leader in an article published in *Right*, E. L. Anderson, Ph.D., under the title MOVING THE IMMOVABLE OBJECT, had this to say in part:

"So far, the minority groups have carried the day simply because of the apathy and misunderstanding of most white people (including Southern ones) who up to now have tended to deliberately ignore the problem rather than face up to it. But thanks to the constant agitation of the issue (an agitation which is essential from the viewpoint of the minority bosses), more and more of the

⁷ These are specious arguments. What opportunity did the early settlers have who came from England to Massachusetts. No houses, no food other than that which they brought with them. Nothing to begin life with. *They made opportunities as must all men who will ultimately succeed.*

majority groups are being forced to see the horrifying issue in its real terms. And this is in spite of the most massive and all-inclusive propaganda war which has ever been waged against a people. Obviously, this issue amounts to nothing less than *the imminent threat of total dispossession and despoilment of the very group that built America!*

"The drive for 'integration' is really nothing less than a program to permanently transfer control of America's destiny to people other than those who created it. As this clear fact becomes more widely realized it will surely result in the vast strengthening of the forces opposed to integration, as well as the continued weakening of the forces promoting it.

"The crucial point is that the minority group bosses have a lion by the tail and can't let go.⁸ They have worked their followers up into such a frenzy that anything less than full integration is looked upon as treason to their race. The bosses realize that if they are to keep a reasonable command of the situation then they must continue to voice the most extreme demands.

"There are two clear lessons in this for nationalists. First, instead of continuing to dodge the race issue as too embarrassing we must realize that the conflict is here to stay and grow until at last all people will be forced to stand on one side or the other. We must realize the national nature of the problem.

"The second point is equally if not more important. It is that we must move the Immovable Object—ourselves!

⁸ Some of the minority groups are beginning to realize that the people of the North are becoming conversant with the facts and more alert to the evils brought about by *compulsory segregation*.

It must move *forward*.—It must take the offensive against the arrogant groups which have attacked it. It cannot continue to remain passive, negative and defensive unless it wishes to surrender victory.

"It is easy to understand why the forces fighting for American tradition and Constitutional government are at present fighting a defensive battle only. This is because they have only recently come into existence, and because they originated as a protest and defensive movement. As such they have hardly had time to set positive goals for themselves, or do anything much less than attempt to stave off the thrusts of the enemy.

"It is now the time for the leaders of these groups to develop a clear philosophy with definite goals above and beyond mere "segregation," and expressed in terms which do not sound like mere reactionary and negative sputtering.

"This vitally important mission must be and can be carried through successfully. First of all the problem itself must be understood by leaders from all sections of the country. Next, it must be borne in mind that of all the people in the world, Americans cannot be persuaded to "go back to" this or that date in history.⁹ They must continually "move forward." The difference is partly one of semantics but in it lies the key to whether or not the present struggle will result in ultimate defeat of a disorganized, confused and misled rabble or victory of the same people, armed with and united by a positive philosophy, and heading towards a specific and clear goal.

"There is yet another reason why this mission cannot

⁹ Except that as history points out the gross errors committed and what the result was of such errors. The most notable forced Integration was that of Portugal.

fail. That is because unless our common philosophy is developed, the latter stages of the oncoming struggle may result in the elevation of a totalitarian group to leadership, and if this happens—even if our side wins—we will end up with a dictatorship, one of the very things we are fighting against.

The mass of Negroes actually believe that the minority groups professing to be working for their interest, are doing so with unselfish intent. These should read Herbert Hill's pamphlet: "THE COMMUNIST PARTY—ENEMY OF NEGRO EQUALITY." It is reported that Wilkins, NAACP Secretary frankly stated actual truth:

"Far from being sincere about doing something for Negro rights, the Communists USE THE NEGRO MERELY AS A PAWN in the Soviet Campaign *against the United States and the Western world.*"

Enlightened Negroes are aware of this, and are conscious of the fact that when those who now use the Negroes as pawns for their own ulterior purposes they will "throw them to the wolves," when their object is attained. Many Negroes are also fully aware of the rising anger of the white race in many parts of the North where lower class Negroes have not only been infringing on their rights but have been guilty of gross crimes upon white women.

Another writer, fully conversant with the designs of the Communist party, Manning Johnson, testifying before a Louisiana Joint Legislative Committee, March, 1957, said in part:

". . . The reason the Communist party has concentrated on the NAACP is because in recent years it has become one of the most influential Negro—or should I say MIXED BREED—organizations offering the possibility of developing a revolutionary national liberation movement, particularly in the South. . . .

"The NAACP was *never* a Negro organization and never had the Negro's welfare at heart. It was founded by WHITE PEOPLE, [the Negro as a whole should be made conscious of this truth] some of whom were Socialists, liberals, and dogooders."—Extracts from *Mercury Magazine*.

William Z. Foster, high priest of Communism in America, in his book *TOWARD SOVIET AMERICA* promises the Negro that:

"On the Soviet System¹⁰ the Negro will have the most complete equality¹⁰—economically, politically, Socially.¹⁰ . . . He will have ample land, CONFISCATED FROM WHITE LANDLORD."¹¹—*Emphasis ours.*

One is given to wonder. Have the Negroes of America actually given any thought to this promise? Have they studied the system in vogue in countries under Soviet control; in Israel? WE QUESTION IT. Have the white people of America become conscious of what would happen to them if present plans are actually carried out?

On the contrary, is there any one so naive as to believe that when the awakening comes the race that built America to what it is, would give up without the utmost struggle, property

¹⁰ Nowhere under the Soviet or Marx system, not even in Israel, is the Negro blessed with any of these things. As a matter of fact, he does not have one-tenth the opportunity he has right here in America and the dissatisfaction he is taught to feel will be his undoing as a race. The Negro should realize before it is too late what awaits all who attempt to force an issue against the Will of the mass.

¹¹ This should be a warning to the Americans as a whole and landowners of reasonable acres especially. Those who have swallowed the *hate* of "Brotherhood" are standing on the brink of being denuded of all they possess, by "due process of law," of course.

which, in most instances, they earned by the SWEAT OF THEIR BROWS. First, through suffering, deprivations, and extreme labor (the western treks); second, through their inventive ability, built the greatest nation on earth. What will this mean? That though the white man would naturally suffer great loss of property and lives, the Negro would suffer ten to one, and would be practically wiped out. No one should be foolish enough to think that the agitators would come to the aid of negroes.

The Negro of America should wake up and become wise to false promises and betraying "friends" who would not hesitate to make him a victim of the Communist's myth of the *promised land*.

The number of Negroes in America suffering from a *white-woman complex* and the *illusive* dream of being able to successfully defy by cohabitation or marriage, both the *Divine* and *Natural Law*, are many, though by no means of the better class. Those who are so obsessed perhaps husbanded such desires long before Foster promised them that:

"The American Soviet¹² will, of course, abolish restrictions upon inter-marriage.¹³ . . . The revolution¹⁴ will only hasten this process of integration, already proceeding throughout the world¹⁴ with increasing tempo."

¹² It is to be noted that here Foster limits the Soviet's help while America is to do all the things he promises the Negro. He is very careful not to promise that the Soviets in other parts of the world will offer much help. Both Negro and Whites should give this thought.

¹³ Desegregation is *not* the issue, and never has been in the minds of the Soviet and Marxist agents. This is only the wedge. The intent is miscegenation and mongrelization, the system that has destroyed practically every great nation that ever existed, making them victims of their own folly.

¹⁴ If the threat to white women is not enough to awaken

It is unquestionably true that intermarriage has increased in America during the past few years. This is generally true in Filmland and higher circles of college life, partly due to a tactic and often outspoken church system that is becoming decadent with death to the *Christic* ideal. The white race, unfortunately, is so deeply mentally inert that it is not taking this matter seriously, and when it does it may be too late. WHY this indifference? Our research among the people reveals a strong belief that the women moving in these circles are actually morally decadent and of little account. Once there is an indication that such intermarriages are becoming frequent among more conservative groups, there will be, it is promised, immediate, and, "deadly" reaction. Knowing, as we do, from past crises how Americans think and REACT, one can readily comprehend how this will be.

A Prediction

Dr. Guy B. Johnson, professor of Sociology, University of North Carolina, predicts that if the present trend toward a social mingling continues the Negro and white race in America will be thoroughly integrated in 500 years. This is probably the number of years it took in India and Egypt to bring the downfall of the races.

This is undoubtedly a true prediction and if so, the white race will have committed MORAL AND SPIRITUAL SUICIDE by simply following in the footsteps of the white races in past ages.

If the powerful minority groups will continue to be given their way by the sanction of authority and succeed in having

the decaying white man, then certainly threat of revolution, made by a leader of the Soviet, should do so. It is not an idle threat as Russia has proven so fully in many countries in the old world. If the white man does not awaken, then he amply deserves whatever may happen to him.

enacted stricter Civil Right and desegregation laws, and the White race continues in its inert-do-nothing stupor, the time is foreseeable when America, like Portugal in the past, will have legislation enforceable by the Militia compelling white women to marry Negroes.

The amalgamation of the races is not only unnatural, but it is always productive of deplorable results. Our daily observation shows us that the offspring of these UNnatural connections are generally (there are exceptions) sickly and effeminate, and that they are inferior in physical development and strength, to the full blooded races.

A positive indication that the white and Negro blood does not actually fully mix, is found in the fact:

"That the offspring of a mixed marriage; white woman to Negro male may have a white child followed by a colored one, or several of one color, then of another color, mongrels. This is illustrated in the canine family, also resulting in mongrels, from which we have the term "mongrel."

A group of churchmen of Episcopal persuasion, known as "Concerned Churchmen" and generally wiser than the common run of Churchmen today, issued a statement of principles founded on reason and the DIVINE and Natural Law with which we fully agree:

"We are concerned about the acts and pronouncements of some churchmen in falsely substituting the physical association of men for the Spiritual brotherhood of man in Jesus Christ. . . . We believe that the races of man, having been created by God, are favored in the sight of God, and that the Church should not seek to destroy by physical association and amalgamation that which God created." The CITIZENS' COUNCIL, October, 1958.

"The real goal of race-mixing attempted in America is intermarriage, a left-wing historian¹⁵ told an Illinois audience this month.

"Allen Nevis, history professor at Columbia University, told a symposium at Knox College, Galesburg, Illinois, that the present generation *must* plan 'to raise the Negro¹⁶ race' to a plane in character, cultivation, and manners where they will be entirely fit to intermarry¹⁷ with the White race.

In passing let us emphasize the fact that we do NOT blame the Negro. It was not his Utopian dream, but the scheme of white and mixed race men for the admitted purpose of *using the Negro in furthering their Own interest*, as perhaps inadvertently admitted by Foster.

Plot Exposed

In revealing the true aim of the race-mixers, Nevis con-

¹⁵ This "historian" is certainly more honest than the usual ones advocating desegregation. If all were equally honest, the white man might awaken from his Utopian dream, a dream that has been the downfall of every great nation before this.

¹⁶ An utterly illogical, unfair, dangerous and ungodly concept. *Who was there* to help the Pilgrims to disembark on an unfriendly soil, a wilderness filled with hostile Indians, no homes, little food, children, and nothing to look forward to but suffering and hard work, with death staring them in the face? Who was there to raise them in character, cultivation and manners? Did they wait for some ministering angels to come and bring them food or raise it for them; cut timber to build log houses without conveniences, schools the like of which few people ever saw, and fight the Indians for them? Not at all, *they just "dug in" and trusted God.*

¹⁷ The professor evidently forgot himself and made a false step, saying that "after all of this *is done for them (not by them)* *they will be entirely fit to intermarry with the white race.*"

ceded that the idea of racial intermarriage is unpopular, and causes [real] Americans "to flinch before it." But he added, the generations of 1958 must accept this hard, grim fact, not evade it, and must make plans for meeting it.

"Once the Negro is well educated, as well mannered,¹⁸ as well paid, and as well guided¹⁸ as the white man—once the colored race has become socially economically, and culturally the absolute equal¹⁸ of the white race, as it must become,¹⁸ THEN intermarriage will become frequent.

"Nevis is identified with 'Liberal' elements, and has won a Pulitzer Prize for history. He spoke at Knox College observance of the centennial of one of the Lincoln-Douglas debates."

It would appear that the Methodist Church, after years of independent growth, must now depend on their colored brethren for progress and expansion within their ranks, as the following news item indicates:

**"Negro Influx Termed Field for Methodism
Special to *The Inquirer*"**

"Buck Hill Falls, Pa., Jan. 22. — The rapid growth of minorities, especially Negroes, in American cities offers not only an opportunity to Methodist evangelism but the chief means of keeping Methodism vital in those urban

¹⁸ It is well to note the many exceptions to inter-marriage, but did Nevis and others like him take into consideration that the white race has had thousands of years of experience, suffering, hard labor, deprivation and lastly, education of every description and culture, while the Negro has actually had less than a century of education and few opportunities for culture. Can anyone believe that this gap can be covered either by a decree of Court or even Herculean effort?

areas, a speaker told the Methodist Board of Missions today.

"The board, meeting here this week, heard a report by the Rev. Dr. Charles E. Golden, of Philadelphia, a director of its Division of National Missions that Chicago's non-white population increased by 197,000, Pittsburgh's by 21,000 and Cleveland's by 63,000 between 1950 and 1956.

"These figures are suggestive not only of the rapid replacement of whites in the city, especially the inner city, but also of the overcrowding with its resultant complications and problems," he said.

"Another report informed the board that offers to sponsor refugees arriving from overseas are urgently needed by the Methodist Committee for Overseas Relief."

*What of the Children of Mixed Marriages
Against Both Divine and Natural Laws?*

These children, thousands upon thousands, now born mostly out of wedlock, breeds, denied the opportunity to develop a sense of decency, morality, personal responsibility, or of family life, will be, with few exceptions, worse than animals, as is now recognized, because animals live naturally while men irrespective of color, must develop these instinctive traits.

The white women, more than anyone else, will suffer most if the evil is permitted to continue. Why so? Because it is their husbands in their official capacity who pay out millions of hard-earned money (much of which belongs to the wives of white men) to support these illegitimates, in some cases as many as eleven children to a single female. It is the payment of this money that ENCOURAGES THE PROMISCUOUS BREEDING BY WOMEN OF THIS CHARACTER.

Another evil born of this trade, for such it is, is the fact that thousands of white men who once patronized brothels have now transferred their "affection" to these colored, and even some white females, because of no need to pay. It is a business investment on the part of the females. The State pays the bills in support of their mongrel illegitimate. How desperate this evil has become is indicated by two items:

"In the metropolis of The City of Brotherly Love, 86 per cent of the illegitimate births recorded were Negro —3464 and only 662 white."

"One 40-year-old UNMARRIED woman has 14 children, *nine of whom are on relief*. The others were too old. This woman was receiving \$189.00 a month relief, even though the father of six children is living with her."

CHAPTER EIGHT

Section One

What of the Church in Relation to Desegregation and Intermarriage?

The Catholic Church in a booklet entitled DISCRIMINATION AND THE CHRISTIAN CONSCIENCE issued by the Catholic Bishops of the United States after a meeting held in Washington, D. C., Nov. 14, 1958, widely circulated and also published in *U. S. News and World Reports* Nov. 21, 1958, is rather cautious.

We believe it well to deal with a few of the pertinent points for our readers' information:

"In the providence of God there are among us millions of fellow citizens of the Negro race. *We owe to these fellow citizens . . . and for whose welfare history imposes on us a special¹ obligation of justice, to see that they have in fact the rights which are given them in our Constitution.* This means not only political equality but also fair economic and educational opportunities, a just share in public welfare projects, good housing without

¹ This we question. No individual and no race should be granted *special* privileges. To do this would require special legislation and the great Theodore Roosevelt called this "class legislation." The first Pilgrims did *not* ask for "special" privileges, but were willing to be on their own. No white man either as an individual or a class, should *ask for* or be given special consideration. The citizens of America should *not* be obligated to any man or class of men to grant such privileges as it would be manifestedly unfair to the rest of mankind.

*exploitation,*² and a full share for the social advancement of the race.

"Today we are told that Negroes, Indians (East India), . . . differ too much in culture and achievements to be assimilated in schools, factories and neighborhoods. Some decades back the same charge was made against the immigrants: Irish, Jewish, Italian, Polish, Hungarian, German, Russian.³

"Our nation now stands divided by the problem of compulsory⁴ segregation of the races and the opposing⁴ demand for racial justice.⁵ No region of our land is im-

² Should this not be equally true as it concerns the white man, more so since it was he who made America what it is. For the rest, we heartily agree.

³ A decidedly poor comparison. These immigrants were on their own. There were no powerful minority groups to petition the Court, or the legislature to pass laws, forcing any one to give them preferred treatment. It remained entirely up to them to find work or starve; a place where they might make their homes. If they wanted their children to have an education, the public school together with the jeers, sneers and insults of the children had to be accepted. No preferred treatment for them; no compulsory service of any nature. They were just poor immigrants hardly worth a thought. They did not ask for favors; they accepted conditions as they found them *and proved themselves against all odds.*

⁴ History shows that at least as far as America is concerned any form of compulsion is certain to bring about strife. A government based on the Constitution will not *force* class recognition and the present instance is the first attempt of its kind. In all previous instances, as will be noted, such problems were solved amicably without compulsory legislation or action.

⁵ Racial justice can no more be achieved by legislation, than is the control of gangsterism, narcotic evils (worst of all evils), syndicates of gamblers, and other great wrongs. This can only be done by the enlightenment of the people so they will not

mune from strife⁶ and division from this problem. . . . We hope the overwhelming majority of our white citizens will see that our colored citizens obtain their *full rights* as given them by God,⁷ the Creator of all, and guaranteed by the democratic traditions of our nation.

"Reason alone taught philosophers through the ages respect for the sacred *dignity of each human being* and the *fundamental rights* of man (as an individual). Every man has an *equal right* to life,⁸ to justice before law,⁹ to marry¹⁰ and rear a family under human conditions, and to an *equitable opportunity* to use the goods of this earth¹¹ for his needs and those of his family.

". . . discrimination¹² based on the accidental¹³ fact of race or color, and as such, injurious to human rights

indulge in such destructive habits and *refuse to in any way associate with those guilty of such acts.*

⁶ Strife cannot be eliminated so long as an attempt is made to force anyone to do that which tradition and conscience tells him is wrong.

⁷ To this we heartily agree, but let us consult and comply with Sacred Scripture rather than with the acts of erring men.

⁸ So long as it does not interfere with the rights and privileges of others, granting them the same, *but no greater*, rights.

⁹ This justice is now in many instances denied the white man by Civil Rights Laws. Instead of *being tried before a jury of his peers*, he is prejudged and sentence passed upon him.

¹⁰ This is side-stepping the problem of intermarriage, the purpose for which segregation was sought, as freely admitted by its most ardent proponents.

¹¹ *If honestly earned* and not obtained by coercion in one form or another.

¹² This is a far-fetched declaration not based on fact unless we declare the Bible a book of untruths. To prove this point one need only to study the *Book of Revelation* which is filled from beginning to end with examples of discrimination and the one

regardless of personal qualifications or achievements¹³ cannot be reconciled with the truth that God created all men with equal rights and equal dignity."¹⁴—*Emphasis and Interpolations ours.*

"It is a matter of historical fact that segregation in our country has led to oppressive conditions¹⁵ and the denial of basic rights¹⁵ for the Negro. This is evident in the fundamental fields of education,¹⁶ job opportunity¹⁷ and housing.

England Awakening to the Dangers of Race Mixing

Englishmen are much more conservative in their conclu-

conclusion is that: *Obey and be saved. Disobey and be damned*, irrespective of who you may be.

¹³ We heartily agree with this, but are Civil Rights and Desegregation enactments based on this ideal? Read, think and reason, and find the answer! Is it not true that under these Laws a select group is to be given or favored, whether or not they have achieved?

¹⁴ Dignity is not a matter of birth or race. *It is something to be achieved.* We have met some of the most undignified persons who were the scions of socially prominent and dignified parents; and the most dignified who were the offspring of the lowly and uneducated.

¹⁵ For every basic right a Negro is denied, it is possible to name many instances where the white man is despoiled of his Constitutional rights in all the instances cited.

¹⁶ Is this statement based on facts? Take as an instance the best known city in America, Little Rock. Are the schools for Negroes less modern than those for white children? Are the teachers less competent? Let those with full information answer.

¹⁷ An uncounted number of instances could be cited where the white man is discriminated against insofar as jobs are concerned. You do not believe this? Possibly you have not listened to the testimony given during the labor investigation. Is legislation underway to correct this gross injustice? Let him who reads answer this.

sions than we Americans, but conservative as they may be, it appears that the general opinion is adverse to race mixing, and that they are aware of the dangers involved to the white race as a result of which the colored man would be certain to suffer, though possibly not so soon as the white man.

It would be well if our legislature (we have few statesmen) were to give consideration to a statement made by the Earl of Pert, Minister of State, Colonial Offices:

"Racial discrimination is NOT something which can be cured by a simple legislative stroke. *To legislate might well have the opposite effect to what was intended.* To enforce such legislation would present tremendous difficulties. . . ."

The American people are learning this fact the hard and difficult way, destroying within a short time all that had been gained through the past near century.

The House of Lords debate brought to light:

"The result of these circumstances [the influx into England from Jamaica and her colonies] and differing social traditions has been the production of considerable numbers of illegitimate children, and it is worth considering what has happened to some of them. There have been two waves of admission to residential nurseries of illegitimate colored children since the latter part of the war. THE FIRST RESULTED FROM THE ADVENT OF COLORED AMERICAN SERVICEMEN and, to a less extent, of Africans during the latter part of the war and years of demobilization. . . . Socially, the half-caste (mongrel) children are seriously handicapped because their mothers themselves are frequently¹⁸ irresponsible and tend to reject them, and foster parents and adopters in general do not want them.

¹⁸ Exactly what is happening here in America.

A large number of them grow up in institutions, with few personal friends and are thus more likely in later life to join the ranks of the maladjusted and delinquent.

According to the British scientists:

"There is now, and will be for long, an inconvenient lack of precise knowledge about the long-term implication of human genetic mixtures taking place in our times. . . . There is indeed need to ponder whether there is *justification for facilitating or blessing a freedom to intermingle unless there are evident ultimate genetic advantages to the production* or persons more likely to be capable, happy and altruistic in the circumstances of the future.¹⁹

"Others no doubt would wish to reverse this sentiment and would ask, is there justification in preventing inter-mingling until the evidence against it is scientifically²⁰ stronger.

"These are questions of judgment, but it is well to recognize that it is easy to mix, but impossible to unmix²¹ . . . Of immediate value would surely be the imposition of certain tests upon probable reproduction—irrespective of race or origin. SPECIAL CONSIDERATION SHOULD BE GIVEN BEFORE EMIGRANTS ARE ALLOWED TO ENTER

¹⁹ American jurists and legislators do not so question, but take it for granted it will be so, while all history of the ages teaches us differently, and that it is to the eternal detriment of both races participating.

²⁰ Most scientists are notably adverse to accept anything until science proves or disproves. They read history, but it does not make any impression upon their scientific minds. All too many do not believe in God, hence to them there is no *Divine Law*.

²¹ In America not a thought is given to this vitally important subject. Everything is taken for granted, irrespective of what the price later may be.

THE COUNTRY HAVING MEASURABLE and LARGEY INHERITABLE PHYSICAL AND MENTAL CHARACTERISTICS ATTRIBUTED BELOW THE AVERAGE FOR THE UNITED KINGDOM.²²

"Many must most surely find themselves unable to feel convinced that there *are* positive advantages to be gained from an increased mingling of African and European (or American) genes—that is to say 'Blood' in popular parlance—within the population of the United Kingdom. Indeed, many are convinced already that the DISADVANTAGES of large-scale mingling *are* heavy. Quite apart from the absence of any genetic advantages likely to accrue from the miscegenation, the growth of a host of social disadvantages and tensions would seem probable."

—*Interpolations and Emphasis ours.*

Extracts from an article printed in the *U. S. News and World Report*, Nov. 28, 1958.

Tradition

The tradition of a people *does not die out easily or quickly*. It may "fall asleep" or be in abeyance for a while, but it always awakens and if betrayed, beware!

Segregation, say what you will, is a *basic Anglo-Saxon principle*. Throughout the world, wherever Anglo-Saxons, Celtic, Northern and related people have settled, they have instinctly maintained, except for the moribund, racial purity by keeping themselves socially separate from African, Mongolian and Malayan natives. As example, the people of Australia are classified as 97 per cent of English extraction and they bar all colored races as immigrants. This is equally true of New Zealand. In the Union of South Africa as settled by the British

²² Little or no attention is paid to those who intermarry, hence there will be no gauge for later judgment.

and Dutch, both of whom are Anglo-Saxons, segregation is total. The white South is still predominantly Anglo-Saxon and has practiced segregation to prevent miscegenation and mongrelization, though it has not isolated the Negro and has made every effort to grant them equal facilities with their own, and harmony of association was gradually increasing until the Supreme Court issued its edict. This harmony was disrupted by the Court ruling.

Religious Concepts – Ministerial Responsibility

The writer of this chapter has been ordained to the Ministry and believes that a true servant of GOD MUST believe in the *Divine Law* so carefully laid down in the Bible for man's guidance and that he may not, if a true servant, evade this Law by subterfuge. The entire chapter is based on this theory.

The word "discrimination" is in these days used almost more than any other. WE MUST NOT BE GUILTY OF DISCRIMINATION. TO ADVOCATE CERTAIN THINGS IS TO DISCRIMINATE. TO DISCRIMINATE IS UNHOLY, TO BE DAMNED. What is the law according to Biblical teachings?

If we turn to Deuteronomy, chapter seven, we find the descriptive heading of the chapter: COMMUNION WITH THE NATION *forbidden*. In the second verse, we are warned: ". . . THOU SHALT MAKE NO COVENANT WITH THEM NOR SHEW MERCY ON THEM." Not only was it forbidden to have dealings with them, but even NOT TO SHOW THEM MERCY was commanded.

In the third verse is given the law as to intermarriage with a different people or race:

"Neither shalt thou make marriage with them; thy daughter thou shalt *not* give unto his son, nor his daughter unto thy son."

Is the Lord mocking the people, or are there LAWS GOVERNING? Is the Bible to be accepted only when it pleases us, or does it contain actual, irrevocable Laws? If it does, then these Laws precede all others.

Is this evasion of *Divine* and Natural Laws to continue, world without end, or will there be a dynamic interruption to disobedience? Is there not even an indication of an awakening to the need of obedience? *There is!*

One of the oldest teachings relative to MAN'S FUTURE, is that which was accepted by untold billions in the past, now believed by millions. It is the teaching that man returns to earth, generally known as REINCARNATION. The Bible deals somewhat with this Law.

According to this concept, the Soul of man returns to earth time and again until it has fulfilled its destiny according to the law of its release from heaven in the first place.

This concept is that a man may have a great love to achieve a specific goal during his earth life and make effort toward that end, but fail to succeed. If, however, he did all in his power to succeed, then on his return to earth he will be drawn into an environment which will enable him to achieve the desired end.

Further than this, the Soul need not return to again be of the same race—the Egyptians never wanted to leave Egypt or be of any other race, hence they had themselves embalmed so that their migration would be impossible. Under this concept, the Negro may wish to return as a white man or of any other nation, and if it is his *real* desire, so will it be. This would solve the race problem.

This concept is being accepted by many of the better educated Negroes and made part of their religion. They have no desire for race mixing. So firmly are they convinced of this

truth that their Ministers will not marry white and Negro. The *special reason?* *That such children*, conceived against the *Divine Law*, would be Soulless.

We repeat, this chapter is based on religious inculcations accepted as both *Divine* and Natural Laws.

CHAPTER NINE

Mongrelization, or Racial Intermarriage, as a Means Toward Demoralization and Degeneration¹ From the Standpoint of History, Psychology and Physiology, and the Opinions of Great Negroes Themselves

Repetition—in emphasis: There is vast confusion in the use of the two terms: "Segregation," and intermarriage or "Mongrelization." This confusion has been brought about deliberately by those selfishly concerned.

The object of a *militant group* active in the cause of integration is *not* actually desegregation, but mongrelization as *a means to bring about demoralization and degeneration of both the white and the colored races as a result of intermarriage. The opening wedge to accomplish this end is integration.*

The primary aim of the militant Socialists and Communists, or Marxist revolutionaries (*not* of the Negroes themselves] for the degeneration and subjugation of man has made the goal of intermarriage one of the most potent weapons toward their end. IN THE HISTORY OF THE WORLD, *this has never failed* to bring the desired results.

They are wise in the history of man. They know that general intermarriage would be either race suicide, or moral degeneration, as it has always been in the past.

The agents of destruction, who master-mind the scheme

¹ Those of the white race, and of Christian persuasion, concerned with the Biblical injunction against the mixing of bloods, and the effort to help every race reach its highest estate, or destiny, without interfering or infringing, on the rights, privileges and destiny of one another.

and their brain-washed stooges, have been spreading "Christian" theories of "Brotherhood,"² though they do not believe in a God. They actually have millions believing that being "white" is something to be ashamed of, and to be mixed was God's plan for man. So well have they succeeded that even ministers of the various Christian denominations now doubt, and preach directly contrary to God's own Law for the procreative nature of the races, as so clearly stated in *Genesis*. It is to be noted that they never quote Jewish Laws, or the teachings of Moses on the subject.

Factually, desegregation, at least in a great part of the North, has for years been proceeding gradually and without contention. It has been so natural that the word itself is no longer used, and there is not even a subconscious thought on the subject.

As an example: These lines are being written in a country community not far from a flourishing town. Within six miles of this town there are five of the most modern elementary and secondary schools. Twenty-five years ago a Negro family moved into this country district. No one gave the matter a thought; instead, the members of this family were employed by the white people. Gradually other Negro families moved into the district, until at present there are almost as many colored as white fami-

² The term "Brotherhood" as at present made use of in brainwashing, is a delusive, wholly misleading word. Brotherhood does *not* include the right to force others to think or act as we do, nor the right to compel, by law or coercion to share with them that which by right of effort belongs to us. Neither does it include the privilege to force us to accept them socially or otherwise. Brotherhood, at the most, should expect no more than a willingness to make an exchange. In no respect does it include compulsion in any manner whatsoever. That is bondage or slavery. Brotherhood is decidedly not based on "take all and give nothing," as at present interpreted, and as is even more or less enforced by edict and legislative action.

lies. THERE NEVER HAS BEEN ANY CONFLICT BETWEEN THE TWO RACES. It must be said though that neither one ever encroached upon the other.

Approximately ten years ago, Negro families in the City of New York began sending their children to these families to enable these colored children to attend the public schools. They have continued to attend these schools; they ride to and from schools, in the same buses with the white children.

About a year ago a Negro with a white wife³ moved into the district. Neither the whites nor the Negroes protested, but the Negroes have completely isolated them; they will have nothing to do with them. It is almost certain that should "romance" develop between other Negro and white persons in this locality, there would be serious trouble.

Undoubtedly the writer, or writers of Genesis were conscious of the fact that the mixing of bloods would be destructive to both races. If one race is of a higher type, especially mentally and morally (Spiritually), then Biblically speaking, *the lesser cannot be raised on the shoulders of the higher and the higher will be drawn down to the lower. Each one individually must climb "Jacob's ladder" if they desire to reach "heaven."*

From the standpoint of religion, the question is an extremely simple one: *Do you believe in God?* If you do, then you must believe that He did nothing, created nothing, unless it was for a specific purpose and within the Divine Law. The Creation of man, if we believe Sacred literature, received His greatest attention: hence He must have had special reasons for

³ Such intermarriage is something so greatly desired by a certain very small minority, that the earth and hell itself is being turned up-side-down to force the integration of the white and dark races. The intent is that the dark races mixing with the white races, becomes less dark, and, by force of Legislative action, benefit from all the things the white races possess, or have developed.

the creation of the different races: *each race with a different destiny to reach a common end.* This idea accepted, *each race must work out its own destiny, just as must each individual of all races.* It cannot be accomplished by intermarriage; if it could, there would have been no reason for the creation of the different races in the first place, otherwise God were guilty of a serious mistake. This, to those who believe in a God and an exact law, is unthinkable; nor did the writer of *Genesis* think so when he transcribed the law succinctly stated in a few words: "Everything after its own kind."

The Rev. G. T. Gillespie, D.D., President Emeritus of Bell Haven College, Jackson, Miss., in a booklet: A CHRISTIAN VIEW OF SEGREGATION, outlines in brief, the Biblical teachings or *Divine Law*. He gave his own conclusions to which the most learned among the colored people in America agree:

"Integration is *not* the means to race improvement [but of race deterioration].⁴

"Segregation is one of Nature's universal laws.⁵

"Segregation tends to promote progress.⁶

"The principle [Law governing] of segregation is

⁴ If men are true to God and their own nature they will be *proud of their race* and will do all in their power to make their race the greatest of *all* races. If they plead necessity of intermarriage to improve the race, *they thereby admit* that another race is greater, more of a *master race*, than their own.

⁵ By *obedience* to Nature's Laws, man also obeys the *Divine Law*. This determines the degree of his advancement toward a master race, whereas by disobedience he destroys both himself and the race he mixes with.

⁶ To intermarry with another race is a confession that the other race is greater. If such a race is greater, and its achievements such as to be duplicated or matched, then whatever is desirable in such a race should be the *incentive* to the self-admitted lesser, to rise to the higher *by self-effort*.

defensible on Biblical grounds and is not un-Christian.

1. *Genesis* 4:11-26. Explains the first separation.
2. *Genesis* 6:7-22. Illustrates the demoralization effects (Degeneration; mentally and Spiritually) as a result of inter-marriage.
3. *Genesis* 9:18-29. Offers an explanation of the divisions that followed the sons of Noah.
4. *Genesis* 11:19. Explains the difference in language.
5. *Genesis* 12:25. Explains Abraham's change of life.
6. *Leviticus*. Explains the law against the mingling of diverse things.
7. *Ezra* 9:10. Explains the condemnation of mixed marriages.
8. *Deuteronomy* 7:3. Finally, the warnings by Moses against intermarriages with other peoples.⁷

Time magazine is quoted as stating:

"The original reason for the dietary (kosher) laws was probably partly hygienic, but another end is to keep Jews as a group apart, prevent inter-marriage with non-Jews."

Modern Israel is considered and accepted as a Jewish state. Its Laws relative to intermarriage—mongrelization—are the strictest of any people either of the past or present. So strict that:

Jews may *not* under any circumstances marry a non-Jew. They may not even marry a Christian who has become a Jew or one who has been converted from any other

⁷ The orthodox Jew has always observed this prohibition. It cannot be too often repeated that this is still true in many segregated Jewish sections, as for instance Israel, where intermarriage even with a white person not of the Jewish faith, is punishable by imprisonment.

religion. Agitators for intermarriage between races should remember this.

The Jews are an ancient people who have lived in many countries, have seen the rise and fall of nations, and while some of the reformed Jews endorse, preach, and advocate intermarriage, those known as supporters of Judaism condemn it, and when in power, prevent it by infliction of severe penalties. We do not condemn them for this. We applaud their action.

History and experience has taught them that intermarriage ultimately destroys the races involved.

Besides blood (physical) and devastating psychological law against intermarriage, there is also another, an all-embracing law.

This law does not consider man an Aryan, a Nordic, an Anglo-Saxon, a colored man, a Jew, Chinese or Japanese, but as a separately constructed, individually governed human creature, and of whatever race he may be, the Law immediately begins to D_Egenerate him when he attempts to ignore it.

In consideration of the teachings by Moses on the subject, the propaganda by the Militant Socialists and the enemies of God and Man, too many of whom are admittedly Jews, the people as a whole, Christian and non-Christian, have entirely forgotten the fact that:

Those Jews inculcated with the philosophy and precepts of Judaism have ever been mindful of the original Laws and teachings of Moses, and have eschewed intermarriage or mongrelization. They have made this as cardinal a law, as the laws governing their diet. It is generally believed that their dietary Law was at least in part for the purpose of preventing intermarriage.

Great statesmen such as Thomas Jefferson and Abraham Lincoln who helped lay the very foundation upon which the strength of America is built, recognized the grave dangers of enforced integration and the potential result, mongrelization. Dr. Gillespie in his address and booklet⁸ gives a condensed version of speeches made by these two Statesmen on the subject, also of Booker T. Washington, whose interest in his people no one would question. We quote in part:

Thomas Jefferson, author of the immortal Declaration of Independence devoted much attention and study to the Negro problem. In his autobiography, written in 1821, he had this to say:

"Nothing is more certainly written in the book of fate than that these people are to be free; nor is it less certain that the two races, equally free, cannot live under the same government. Nature, habit, opinion, have drawn indelible lines of distinction between them. It is still in our power to direct the process of emancipation and deportation peaceably."

Abraham Lincoln, venerated and almost deified by the Negro race as their "Great Emancipator" and unfailing friend, in a speech made at Charleston, Illinois, September 18, 1858, said:

"I will say then, that I am not now, nor ever have been, in favor of bringing about in any way the social and political equality of the white and black races . . . and I will say in addition to this, that there is a physical difference between the white and black races which I believe will forever forbid the two races living together on terms of social and political equality."

⁸ For these speeches in their entirety, refer to: *Are You An American?, Great Americans Speak*, by Frederick C. Packard, Jr., professor of Public Speaking, Harvard University.

In an address made to a group of free Negroes at the White House, August 14, 1862, Lincoln further stated his convictions:

"You and we are different races. We have between us a broader difference than exists between any other two races. Whether it is right or wrong I need not discuss, but this physical difference is a great disadvantage to both of us, as I think. . . . If this is admitted, it affords a reason, at least, why we should be separated."

Dr. Gillespie comments that "It is the greatest disaster which ever befell the South and the Nation when Lincoln's plan for colonization of the American Negro in Africa or the West Indies, was defeated by his tragic and untimely death."

Booker T. Washington, the most influential leader and greatest benefactor of the Negro race—perhaps in the whole history of the race as well as in his own generation, in a notable speech given at the Atlanta Exposition in 1895 sounded the keynote of his philosophy, thus:

"The wisest among my race understands that agitation of questions of social equality is the extreme folly, and that progress in the enjoyment of all privileges that will come to us must be the result of severe and constant struggle rather than of artificial forcing. No race that has anything to contribute to the markets of the world is long in any degree ostracized. It is important and right that all privileges of the law be ours, but it is vastly more important that we be prepared for the exercise of these privileges."

*The Opinion of a Negro Woman — A Mother
From The Fort Worth, Texas, Star Telegram*

"I am a Negro mother (I have never called myself 'colored' because I am not ashamed of the name of my race). I don't have fair skin or green eyes. I have five

daughters who have dark skin, dark eyes and hair. They are true, healthy, happy and intelligent representatives of our race. My husband and I have given our children a good home and above average comforts. We have been too busy trying to rear them right to feel sorry for ourselves or feel the world owed us a living. We have been too busy also to preach 'white hate' to our children. We pride ourselves also in being too intelligent to swallow some of the propaganda being fed to the Negro today by organizations which were originated to destroy our country and the American way of life.

"Divide and conquer was the Nazi motto. Remember? It is also the Communist motto. If we don't all beware of the danger we face we may awaken too late to find we are all (black and white) slaves again.⁹ I say again because there isn't a race under the sun that hasn't been in slavery.

"I, like many of my race, believe in segregation. I wish more of them would speak up. It is right, the way God intended it to be and I know He is much wiser than I. The thing that is unChristian is this 'white hate' that is being preached to my race.

"Neither do I feel inferior when the signs read 'colored only' and 'white only.' If the Negro is segregated from the white, then so is the white from the Negro. Who is to say which is superior? Can't I feel 'superior' if I wish? However, sometimes I wouldn't blame the whites if they did feel superior, the way some so-called members of my race try to push and impose themselves upon them.

"These men sit up with their white or part-white

⁹ We wonder if this writer kept informed of the progress of the Civil Rights Legislation and the Supreme Court Edict. If she did, she had a premonition that the Negro would soon have less freedom than ever, while the white in America become *second class citizens*.

wives and have the nerve to tell us they are not seeking imposed social relations or intermarriage with the white race. They make me sick! I blushed with shame to read in your paper a few months ago, where the Army had discontinued dances at one of our military camps in England because some Negro soldiers had 'ganged up' on the buses and molested some white English girls who were coming out to the base to dance with white soldiers. The Negro soldiers were demanding that the white English girls dance with them. It made me furious to think any man of my race would have no more pride and had such rude 'pig' manners. It shamed me most that they had such little respect for the rights of others. I think anyone has the right to refuse to dance with another for any reason whatsoever (whether it is because he is tall, short, fat, dumb, pretty, ugly, black or white). If the situation had been reversed and white soldiers had been 'demanding' Negro girls dance with them, we (my race) would have thought that simply awful—real slavery.

"If the trend keeps on, this mania among the men of my race for marrying or trying to marry white or near white women, there surely are going to be thousands of 'old maid' Negro women.¹⁰

¹⁰ In the thousands of articles published in newspapers, magazines and other mediums, the Negro woman has been given little or no consideration. It is possible that no one is aware that a gathering storm, a real hurricane, is developing among Negro women, and rightly so. Negro men are marrying white women here, there and everywhere where neurotics can be found. This is a direct slap in every Negro woman's face. It is telling her that while her Negro male considers himself the equal of any white male, and more competent to satisfy the white man's mate, she, *the Negro woman, the woman God created as his mate, is by no means as good as the white mate he has chosen*, and that she might as well know it. When the storm breaks, as break it

"The reason for all this is that the Negro is being told to impose himself upon another race, even to be ashamed of the name of his race. Who are the most popular girls in the Negro schools? The part white ones, no matter how dumb they are. Yes, I certainly do believe in segregation. God Himself segregated us. The Bible is full of it. You can stay with your own race and still be kind and friendly to all races. God has always frowned upon mixture of the races. I believe in segregation. I can not do otherwise.

"A NEGRO MOTHER"

The following are extracts from a Southern Negro paper, the COMMUNITY CITIZEN, February 3, 1956, under the heading:

"When Will the Negro Learn That He is Being Used as a Tool?"

"It is an old saying that history repeats itself. We have seen enough of this repetition that we can say it is true. In 1868 Northern Carpet Baggers¹¹ designed a plan to soak the South in debt. They could do it only through the ignorant Negro. Any time a people wish to conquer, they seek a weak spot. Absalon used this technique to overthrow his father David's kingdom.

"Negroes were placed in high State positions during the Carpet Bagger days. The purpose was to accomplish selfish ends (with no regard to the welfare of the Negro as a whole). Negroes soon lost those high positions. Some say they were unlearned, and that we have advanced too

will, some one will be seeking safe hiding places, and it will not be with the help of the neglected colored woman.

¹¹ One of the most disgraceful episodes in American history and in many respects comparable to what is beginning to take place now.

far to allow anybody to use us as tools. (The Northern politicians and enemies of God and man are doing exactly the same thing to the Southern Negro today, only in a different order. . . . The Carpet Baggers placed the Negroes in lawmakers seats, BUT WHAT HAS THE NEGRO GAINED OTHER THAN BECOME CONSCIOUS OF HIS INABILITY?)

"Desegregation has existed in some States for many years, especially in the schools. What states have produced outstanding Negroes? If one will check the record, it will be found that southern states have produced more outstanding Negroes than any other section of the country. The World Book Encyclopedia records National Outstanding Negroes, 85 % of that group were born and reared in Southern States—states where segregation has existed ever since the proclamation of emancipation of slavery.

"With these facts as recorded, what advantage has the northern Negro achieved over that of the Southern Negro? What are they trying to do? The northern Negro knows his condition is brought on by the Communists, and is helping the Marxists forces to spread their propaganda in the southland. If you doubt this statement, contact a lay-northern Negro whom the Communists think does not have much influence, and he will tell you that the Southern Negro has a broader privilege than does the Northern Negro.

"The Marxists forces are trying to destroy our democratic system of government. They are organizing ignorant Negroes, making them believe they are friendless, and that they (the agitators) are set up for this advantage. . . ."

"Integration by Force Not Christian Crusade"

Extracts from a paper by Billy James Hargis, D.D.

"Segregation was the genius behind the accomplish-

ment and conquests of ancient Israel. They were commanded by God to be separated people—not to intermarry with other nations. So long as the Jew was segregated, he walked with God and was a blessing to mankind. When they did not obey the Lord concerning the purity of their race, they came under His curse.

"For 4,000 years, the Jews have succeeded in preserving their racial stock and their cultural heritage, even down to our own day. Ancient Israel achieved a mission and accomplished a good which would have been impossible had they abandoned the principle of segregation and became integrated with the nations which hemmed them in on all sides.

"A problem confronts our nation today, 1956: A choice must be made between 'integrate' and 'segregate.' As Dr. G. T. Gillespie, former president of Belhaven College said: 'The crux of this whole problem of racial relations is . . . essentially a choice between the Anglo-Saxon ideal of racial integrity, maintained by consistent application of the principle of segregation, and the Communist goal of amalgamation, implemented by a wiping out of all the distinctions and the fostering of the most intimate contact between the races and all the nation's of life.'

"No one will deny that segregation is one of nature's universal laws. All living creatures are drawn together in larger or smaller groups by certain affinities based on common physical characteristics. Animals by instinct mate only with their own kind. No intermingling or cross-breeding with animals of a widely different characteristic takes place except under abnormal or artificial conditions.

"Motivated by an appreciation of TRUTH, we should make a careful and prayerful study of this subject. Forget

race prejudice. Embrace race pride,¹² for it is rational, normal, a positive principle which like love of country, has become one of the mightiest forces making for human happiness and progress.

Whether he is conscious of it or not, every time a Negro marries a white woman he admits the colored man's inferiority and psychologically debases—despises—himself. He seldom marries the white woman for love, but attracted by what he believes to be her superiority—the desire to associate with someone higher than himself. This desire is natural when based on an urge to attain a higher status by *worthiness and Nature's Law*. In marrying, or associating with a white woman, he also admits that the white woman is superior—more desirable than the colored woman—and this breeds race hatred in his own race.

Whenever a Negro fights to have his children admitted to a white school—if there are schools for the colored children equal or better than those for the white children—it is an open admission of his sense of inferiority—a desire that his children be associated with those he *feels* (though perhaps will not admit) are superior to his own.

Every time the colored man demands that he be served in a white man's restaurant he admits it is superior to those of his own race or is suffering from an inferiority complex, otherwise he would patronize a colored restaurant. More than that, by his insistence, he attempts to prove his equality with the white people served there. This is proof of an (inferiority) inequality complex or consciousness—the manifestation of a cancerous sore in his mentality and Soul.

¹² Pride of race, irrespective of the race, is the basis of all achievements of that race. All during the period the Romans took pride in their race they conquered the world. When they forgot their inheritance, their degeneration began.

Instead of permitting himself to become a victim of such weaknesses, he should follow the example of the many successful white men of the past who, suffering with an inferiority complex, demanded nothing of others, but made up their minds *to prove to all and sundry what they could do*, and proceeded to demonstrate their innate ability by their efforts and resultant achievements. *This was the secret of Napoleon's greatness, and will be forever the "key" to all human greatness.*

CHAPTER NINE

Section One

“Negroes Favoring Forced Integration Are Enthroning White Man As a Superior Race”

“Although unintentionally, the Negroes favoring integration by force are admitting that the white man is superior, and that they are dissatisfied with associating with their own people, supposed members of an inferior race. Actually, there is no such thing as an Inferior race.¹ In this frantic attempt for integration, Negroes are *assuming* that they are inferior to whites, and THAT IS NOT TRUE.”

“One of America’s best known Negro authors, Zora Neal Hurston, said: ‘Since the days of . . . reconstruction, there has been current a belief that there is no greater delight to Negroes than physical association with whites. . . . It is to be recalled that Moscow, being aware of this folk belief, made it the main plank in their campaign to win the American Negro from the 1920’s on. It was the ‘come on’ stuff. Join the Party and get yourself a white wife or husband. To supply the expected demand, the

¹ Members of all races were born with the Biblical “Talents,” hence they are inferior only to the degree that they neglect to develop these talents. In this respect, it is not the race that is inferior, it is the individual of every race who is inferior to the members of every other race who make an effort to develop themselves, and manifest their God-given birthright. The ignorant white man is inferior to the informed Negro. The immoral white man is inferior to the moral individual of every other race. It is the individual and not the race that is inferior.

Party had scraped up this-and-that off the park benches and skid rows and held them in stock for us. The highest type of Negroes were held to be just panting to get hold of one of these objects. Seeing how flat that program fell, it is astonishing that it would be so soon revived. Politics does indeed make strange bed-fellows. . . . It is well known that we have no sympathy nor respect for the "tragedy of color" school of thought among us, whose fountainhead is the pressure group concerned in this court ruling.

"After his heavenly vision, Peter preached: 'I perceived that God is no respector of persons.' (*Acts 10:34*) It is a satanic deed to enthrone any race as superior to others.² But that's exactly what Negroes are doing who are determined to infiltrate the ranks of the white man by force, because they prefer association with whites above their own people. May God enable men to see virtue and honor of race pride . . . originated by God."

There are two specific reasons why intermarriage between the white and Negro can never be the means of raising the status of the lower; the lower always dragging down the higher to its own level. *The blood:* Just as God, Nature, the Operating Law, or whatever you care to call it, placed pigmentation into the skin of the Negro, so did He, They, or It, place something into the blood of the Negro which is not in the blood of the white man, and which, by intermarriage cannot become "mixed" in the children, the tendency of which is to drag down—DEGENERATE—with few exceptions, those of mixed races.

² No race is enthroned by God or the *Divine Law*. Whatever race has become, or attained to the *Master Race*, did so by the progress made by the individuals of that race. When the achievements of individuals of one race supercede that of all other races, then it has become the master race. *No one race has a priority, or a license, in this respect. All start from an equal basis—the development of the material with which they were born.*

- a. The cause of an as yet incurable disease is carried in the blood. This is known as Sickle-cell anemia found only in Negroes or in some instances in mongrels. As far as is known, this was first noted in a Negro in Chicago some forty years ago and has been subject to much research. Dr. Herman Lehman, a pathologist at St. Bartholomew Hospital in London, claims that it offers the key to the origin of many African tribes. It is an hereditary disease passed on from one generation to another. The Encyclopedia Britannica reports that 7% of American Negroes are afflicted with this dread disease.
- b. An Rh blood group Antigen common to Negroes was reported in *Science News Letter* of October, 1955. The discovery of a new blood group antigen was announced to a group of American and British scientists. The new bloodgroup is called "V." It is said to be common in Negroes. It has been found in some white people—supposed to have Negro blood—or according to an investigator, has become blended by intermarital intercourse. "V" is inherited as a dominant Mendelian character. *It is said that since its discovery many physicians will not permit Negro blood transfusions to their private patients.*

Additional Medical Reports
"South Africa Segregates Blood Plasma

"Cape Town, U. of S. A.—The South African Medical Association has recommended that blood plasma be labeled either 'White' or 'Black,' and injected into the veins of patients accordingly. Although this was an established practice, there has been no official decree to that effect. Dr. A. Zoutendyk, head of the Blood Research Group of the South African Institute of Medical Research,

stated: 'There is a scientific justification for blood dis-association. It would be a far sounder medical procedure to use African blood for African patients and European blood for European patients. This distinction is *scientific and in the interest of the patients and not because of any political or sentimental reasons'.*'—*Emphasis ours.*

The Journal of the American Medical Association is reported to have published the discovery of a new, formerly unknown blood group antigen labelled "V" type and common among Negroes, but infrequently in the blood of whites of pure stock. According to a report, of 318 Negroes tested, both in America and abroad, 105 had this type blood, while of 851 blood samples of the white race, only four were found to have it.

This is an additional reason why blood should be carefully labelled and employed *only* for the same race from which it was extracted.

Georgia Kills Bill to Label Whole Blood

According to a report received February 25th, the Palo Alto, California *Times*, February 22nd, published the following item:

"Atlanta, Ga. (AP) — The Georgia House killed a bill Thursday requiring that whole blood for transfusion be labeled by race.

"The bill *passed* the Senate 35-4. When it came up in the House a shout of approval answered a move to table it indefinitely.³

"Critics of the bill said Medical authorities opposed the measure."⁴

³ Are the members of the Senate of Georgia alone in their opposition to such a Law? It is reported that Florida *has* passed such a law in order to protect their constituents from blood contamination.

⁴ Does the medical profession actually disapprove of such

It is further reported that the bill was tabled as a result of a move made by Rep. W. C. Parker of Baxley. After Parker had made the move, Rep. James Mackay of Decatur declared that the bill was opposed by the Georgia Hospital Association, and by persons connected with the Red Cross⁵ blood banks. Parker is stated to have declared: "If I were dying, I wouldn't care what kind of blood I got if it saved my life. Besides, I think I have enough white blood that it would overcome any little dab of any other kind I might need to remain alive."⁶

Would he likewise agree to have the blood—or a bit of it—from one suffering from syphilis? In the ultimate results there would be little difference.

In defense of the Red Cross it is reported that John S. Billings, Director of Field Service, Southeastern Area, American National Red Cross, had previously declared that:

"Whenever necessary to insure the success of the plan, chapters will collect and hold [blood] in such a manner as to give the physician, and patient, the right of selection at the time of administration."

This would be considered by Americans as the natural and American way—the right of self-selection. Unfortunately, it is also said that Dr. Howard H. Montgomery, Director of the Eastern Area Blood Program, American National Red Cross stated, without reserve, that:

"The race of the donor has not been shown on any

legislation? The medical profession should be permitted to answer this question for themselves.

⁵ Following the defeat of the bill, many of those who had supported the Red Cross declared that they could no longer support the organization morally or spiritually. This resolution appears to be spreading.

⁶ It is questionable if this manner of reasoning would be acceptable to physicians of long experience in blood diseases.

Red Cross records nor on the labels applied to the bottles of blood since 1951."

In further reports that in a letter under date of November 22, 1957, Dr. Sam T. Gibson, Director of Blood Program, American Red Cross, justified mixing blood:

"Persons suffering from sickle cell anemia⁷ are excluded as blood donors by the hemoglobin test just as any other person with anemia is excluded. The defect (sickle cell anemia) exists in the forming organs, and cannot be transmitted by the blood cells themselves.⁸ There is no difference in the blood of humans based upon race or color."⁹

Through more recent medical and scientific conclusions to the danger of the dread sickle-cell, the cause of an incurable form of anemia in the Negro, being conveyed to the white man by the diffusion of blood, even greater possibilities have opened up.

Dr. T. R. Montgomery is reported as giving his opinion:

"Since it is conceded that blood contains the various secretions of the body glands such as the testicles,¹⁰

⁷ Contrary to this declaration, it has been stated time and again that tests are not made for sickle cells.

⁸ Here is an apparent contradiction. *If these cells cannot be transmitted, why the need of the tests for them, if they are ever made?* If these cells cannot be transmitted, *in what manner do so many Negroes become the victims?*

⁹ This statement is questioned by many physicians long experienced in anemic and sickle cell diseases. The transmission of the disease being questionable, who is willing to take the risk *when it can be avoided by the simple method of labelling blood?* *Is human life and man's sanity becoming so expendable that precautions are no longer necessary?*

¹⁰ The life of an individual, whether white or Negro, begins

ovaries,¹⁰ thyroid, pituitary and so forth, and since these secretions have a bearing on the psychological attitudes of people, why would not the administration of Negro blood to a white person finally have a pro-Negro effect on the psychological thinking of that person? Could it not affect the whole course of that person's future life?"

The Ever-Active Psychological Law

Perhaps more powerful, though slower in the degeneration of the races as a result of intermarriage and procreation by Negro and white, is the ever active Psychological Law.

The classical example is that of Othello, the Moor, and his Nordic or Caucasian wife. *Shakespeare* gave this much thought and *OTHELLO* was the result.

Here you have several factors at work:

Othello, a Moor, somewhat dark of color, was not actually

with the impregnation of an ovum by a single cell, or sperm, released by the testes. In that single seed, or sperm, is contained the *whole of the future human being*: his body, his mind, his emotional, and Spiritual nature. The *spirit* of these seeds, or sperm, are not only found in the blood stream, but even in the spinal fluids, and brain cells. Any content in the blood transfused, or diffused, into the body from external sources would naturally mix, and become part, of the person receiving it, and cannot help but directly affect both the physical, and mental nature, of such a person. An old maxim has it: "In the blood is the life, and nature of the person." This "life and nature" is, in some degree, transferred from one person to another.

¹¹ More than a hundred years ago Dr. P. B. Randolph boldly made the statement that "A white woman bearing the child of a Negro will never again be able to bear a pure white child." The nature or germ of the Negro, *via* the ovaries and uterus, hence the blood, contaminated her blood stream as certainly as if she had syphilis transmitted to her at the same time she became pregnant as a result of relationship with a person having that disease. Dr. Randolph's statement has, to our knowledge, never been contradicted.

a Negro, though considered so generally. He was by nature a ruler, a warrior, cultured, of commanding aspect, proud and *conscious* of the fact that he was thought of as a Negro and was extremely sensitive about it.

Desdemona was tall, blond, and of aristocratic mein, equally cultured; a lady in every respect. Here were the ingredients for a happy marriage.

But there was something else; something deeply hidden—the action of the Psychological Law. This is always present, though not always aroused, and may lie dormant for a time. This is truer in the case of the Negro than in other races, and more quickly aroused into activity.

Having the Negro specially in mind, he *may* actually believe himself to be in love with a white woman; but it may also be conceit, or he may want to prove to himself that he is as good as white people. He marries the white woman, and soon becomes conscious there is something missing. At first he may be unaware of what it is, but little things will cause him to reason: "Can she, this white woman, really love me, or, as has so often been maintained, is it merely passion and of a temporary nature." He begins to feel that he may really not be as good as she. He remembers that he is colored. He becomes more conscious of the eternal question: Does she actually love me? And this thought, this psychological law in action, increases with time, and gives rise to a morbid watchfulness to actually see something that will prove to him that she does *not* love him; does not respect him; that he is, after all, just a Negro.

The lava of a living hell begins to boil in him; to consume him; to make hell for him. If he has children with the white woman, this lava boils in them, and this is the virus that brings about demoralization, degeneration. The end: There are many ends, but whatever the end, it is hell for both.

In many instances the awakening to fact, or in others, fear or suspicion, even where there is no real cause, as in Othello's

case, is brought about by another person, generally by one who is jealous, or for a sinister purpose.

In the Othello tragedy, there was no actual reason. They loved each other, but the psychological *factor* was present and required only something to set it into action. This was supplied by one whom Othello considered a friend, but who, with evil intent, sowed the seed of suspicion in Othello's mind. Othello was made conscious of the fact that irrespective of his position, he was after all a Moor, and how was it possible for so beautiful a woman, a white woman of culture, beauty and virtue, to love him?

This Psychological Law in respect to races is *ever active*, and with the exception of the white wife who is *unmoral*, the end is nearly always the same. History is replete with the fall of nations that had achieved almost unbelievable greatness, and then fell into decay in great part as a result of inter-marriages. Among these ancient nations were India, Egypt, Greece and Rome. The Spanish nation degenerated, because of the inter-marriage of her soldiers in the colonies weakening the mother nation. The history of Portugal offers an instance clearly illustrating the results of enforced intermarriage.

CHAPTER NINE

Section Two

Arrogance Personified . . . A Direct Challenge to the White Women of America—Will They Ignore It and Stand Self-Condemned?

What follows is a reported speech by one Roosevelt Williams, said to be high in the Councils of the N.A.A.C.P., made before a meeting held in Mississippi in December, 1954, and later brought to light.

It is to be borne in mind that in our attempt to be more than fair to all groups we depend on *what they had to say for themselves, rather than on our own opinions*. We have not before mentioned the name of any group. In this instance it is unavoidable:

"We, the Negro man, have long known that the white woman is *violently dissatisfied* with the white man¹ and we *know of the millions of clandestine meetings*

¹ White women of America, descendants of the men who made America the greatest and most advanced nation in the world, the wives of men, who, with your help have accomplished more in less time than any other race in a thousand years previously, *what have you to say to the charge that you are violently dissatisfied* with the men of your race? Admittedly, the white man has much to account for, much to overcome, and among the clan are some of the most vicious white slavers, drug peddlers, gangsters, rapists and what not, but these are the exception; the poor fruits that the most perfect tree bears in a certain proportion. But to counterbalance this, what other race has placed its women on the pedestal and worshipped at her shrine, as the white man has?

*sought by the white women.*² They, . . . demand the right to win and love the NEGRO MAN of their choice and shout to the world, 'this is my man and he is a man in every respect'.

"They are likely to be doomed to disappointment when the Negro is of the attitude 'why buy a cow when I can get plenty of milk and butter for nothing'.³ But *we demand the right for any Negro, man or woman, to marry a member of the white race if we can find one fit to marry.*⁴ I am proud of the fact that I am a Negro"⁵

² Do you, sweethearts, mothers and grandmothers of the white race believe that there are millions of your sisters who have fallen so low into *unmorality* as to actually *seek* the carnal "favors" of another race? If you do not believe this then it is time that you arouse yourself to the menace with which this arrogance damns and challenges you.

³ Women of America, do you believe that your white sisters feel that they "are doomed" to disappointment because Negroes are of the opinion: "why buy a cow when I can get plenty of milk and butter for nothing," indicating that your favors may be had for the asking? Do you, can you, believe that white women, descended from the great and glorious men of the past, are fallen so low on the scale of humanity that they actually are ready to offer themselves to another race, even without marriage, in exchange for their "favors?" Are you really ready to "shout to the world that 'this is the man, and he is the man in every respect?'" Bethink yourselves, white women of America.

⁴ Are a certain class of Negroes and their co-workers making such a desperate effort to have a National Civil Rights Bill passed in order that they will have "the right . . . to marry a member of the white race if he—the Negro—can find *one fit to marry*." Have white women, as a class, fallen so low as to actually be *unfit* to become the wife of a Negro? There is another question that imposes itself. Why, if, in the Negro's opinion, the white woman has fallen so low, does he repudiate the women of his race? The woman God gave him to work out

with a proud heritage and I do not intend to contaminate that proud heritage for my children by introducing *inferior stock* into my ancestry."

The writer has the honor to belong to numerous clubs—white men's clubs—and it is his firm conviction that if any member dared to make such remarks about colored women this man is reported to have made of white women, he would be shunned by every member of the club, and rightly so. Womanhood is to be honored, irrespective of race or color. Once men retrograde to a degree that this is no longer part of their nature, their race is in a state of rapid decadence.

an honorable, Spiritual destiny, and *demand laws that will*, in substance, permit him to marry the white woman, or even make of her his concubine? Bethink yourselves, before boasting is turned into fact, at the point of guns.

⁵ We heartily agree that he, as a Negro, should be proud of his race. *The members of every race should be proud of their race*, because God made them so, and gave them a destiny to fulfill, so that each member, singly and as a whole, would do everything possible to prove to the world that their race is *the Master Race*.

However, if Mr. Williams is so proud of his race, and so fearful of contaminating his proud heritage by intermarriage with inferior (white race) stock, why is he so militantly anxious and active to have legislative action giving his race the right to marry into the white race? Evidently there is something amiss, and thousands of those vitally interested would like the answer to these questions.

CHAPTER TEN

The Law of Reaction Cannot Be Evaded Even by the Gods

More than a year ago we made every effort to point out the certainty that both the decisions of the Supreme Court, relative to segregation, and the proposed Civil Rights Law, if enacted, would back-fire to the great disadvantage of those agitating for it, and again make men who had—not won—been *given* a questionable freedom, would find themselves in a worse condition than they have been since the days of slavery. This is *right now* rapidly coming to pass, NOT IN THE SOUTH, BUT IN THE NORTH. IT IS NOT AS A RESULT OF ANYTHING THE GENERAL MASS OF WHITE MEN ARE DOING, BUT SPECIFICALLY RESULTS FROM THE GREAT INFLUX OF NEGROES FROM THE SOUTH TO THE LARGER NORTHERN CITIES. This is responsible for the rising cost of rents, even in the most undesirable neighborhoods, far beyond anything the working class is able to pay. In part, it is also responsible for throwing thousands out of employment, besides INTERFERING WITH THE FUNCTIONING OF NATURAL LAW GOVERNING THE SETTLEMENT OF A MASS OF PEOPLE IN A NEW ENVIRONMENT ALREADY OVERCROWDED.

It is no longer the "yellow" or "scandal" sheets that recognize this, but such highly respectable and authoritative publications as *The Wall Street Journal*, *The Evening Bulletin* (Philadelphia), the *U. S. News and World Report*, and others.

As an introduction to this chapter, we quote, with comment, from the *U. S. NEWS AND WORLD REPORT*:

Another Northern City Runs into Race Problem

"In Buffalo, N. Y., there is a story of a race problem that is growing in the North.

"This story, reported in the *Wall Street Journal*, tells of the trouble cities face in trying to clean up slums: when Negroes move in, Whites leave¹ and new slums grow up.² Negroes complain that public housing is used to maintain segregation. **SIMILAR TROUBLE IS REPORTED IN OTHER NORTHERN CITIES.**

The following is quoted from the *Wall Street Journal*, April 7, 1958, by special permission. — *Emphasis and comments ours.*

**"Rising Negro Influx Stirs New Trouble
For Harried Civic Planners
"Buffalo Fears It May Trade Old Slums for New,
Lose Taxes as Whites Depart
"Setback for Segregation?"**

"By Peter B. Hart and Louis Kraar

"Staff Reporters of THE WALL STREET JOURNAL

"Buffalo, N. Y. — The nation's civic planners are

¹ Under the terrific onslaught of certain groups, the Civil Rights Bill was passed. Then, in certain States, New York, for instance, these same groups forced through a Bill that made it illegal, under heavy penalties, for a landlord to refuse Negroes moving into buildings formerly wholly white. The white man's desire is to "live among his own people" his only remedy is to move. This opens up all such buildings to overcrowding, and the consequent high rentals which Negroes living on wages cannot afford, but must pay even if it means living on a starvation diet, and the denial of other necessities.

² The white man, except in a few instances, has nothing whatever to do with the development of these slums in what was once a respectable district with fair rents. As already stated, it is the overcrowding by the Negroes themselves, that is bringing this about. Will the attempted remedy be Laws to force whites to remain in buildings when Negroes move in? If this were possible, would it solve the problem, or would it become worse by forcing a greater number of Negroes to move into apartments already occupied by Negroes?

desperately seeking to prevent many of their dream cities of tomorrow from turning into nightmares.

"Here in Buffalo you can glimpse some of the difficulties also facing city planners in New York, Chicago and other Northern cities as they struggle to make the results of 'urban renewal' schemes³ conform to their original vision.⁴

Among the problems:

"How can the cities be kept from turning into giant ghetto-like concentrations of low-income folk, largely Negroes,⁵ as the flood of new migrants from the South helps squeeze⁶ more and more middle-income whites to suburban areas?

"In clearing slums, how can the creation of new belts

³ The term "scheme" is well and correctly used. It was, and still is, a scheme that will have the most terrible consequences, many of which are already beginning to be apparent, and recognized by the better informed Negroes.

⁴ This was not a "vision" but an Utopian nightmare from which the schemers, or visionaries, may not wake up until it is too late, though all but the blind recognize the terrible conditions in schools in New York, Philadelphia and Chicago, the beginning of the fruit as a result of putting the "visions" and "schemes" into action.

⁵ There is *no* solution. It is said that "water finds its own level" after which, if there is more, there is an overflow. If the influx of masses is greater than facilities available, and it *is*, then there will be congestion, the conditions of slums, some worse than ever before, resulting in crime. *If the white people remained, it would be so much worse.*

⁶ The more correct term would be usurpation made possible by one-sided Legislative enactments wholly unjust to the men who invested their money in property, and those who build for rental. "Freeze out" by usurpation, is now upheld by the Laws of New York, and other States.

of slums and new racial tensions be avoided in the areas into which the present tenement dwellers are moved?⁷

"How can new migrants and other slum dwellers be prevented from turning even new public housing projects into concrete-and-glass centers of filth and social decay?"

"And how can the cities meet the objections of Negro groups that most urban renewal schemes tend to freeze present patterns of racial segregation in housing?"

"A Vast Migration.

"These problems have been greatly aggravated in recent years by the vast migrations into Northern cities of

⁷ Did those, both white and Negro, who so strongly agitated for integration in rental properties really believe that *only desirable Negroes would migrate from the South?* If they did, *they certainly deceived themselves.* The Negroes themselves are paying the penalty. Generally only the most undesirable Negroes and Puerto Ricans flock to the big Northern cities and, due to their mode of living, soon make it impossible for the better class Negroes to live in these desegregated houses. It seems apparent that the coming conflict will not be as expected, between the white people and Negroes, but between the higher and lowest class of their Negroes.

⁸ To repeat: "water will find its own level." There has been legislation to "freeze out" the white race, but such legislation is impossible to prevent the hordes from flocking into these housing projects to the tune of two, three or more families in a room. This results in filth and crime which will not only increase tension between races but between the class conscious individuals within the race, as well.

⁹ The proper term is—"freeze" out. There is no remedy for this except a return to segregation. If this is attempted, what is to be done with the overflow crowds flocking into large cities for which neither State, nor the cities have made any provision? The responsible white race, and the better class colored, would not attempt to move to a large city unless they had assured themselves of a place in which to live.

unskilled, poorly educated Negroes from the South. If they have not proved the most welcome of new residents—to other Negroes as well as whites—it is not because of any inherent racial¹⁰ characteristics, but mostly because of their economic and educational backgrounds, city officials say. In some cities, migrations of Puerto Ricans and white hillbillies from Kentucky and Tennessee have likewise helped threaten the success of city redevelopment schemes.¹¹

"The pace of the population turnover in Buffalo has been swift indeed. While the city's total population remained near its 1930 level of 573,000, the number of Negro residents soared by 38% between 1950 and 1955 alone. Buffalo gained 14,675 Negroes in this period and lost 13,300 whites. The gain in Negroes was due mainly to new arrivals in town.

"City officials readily admit the exodus of middle-class white families to the suburbs has them worried. It worries Negro leaders, too.

" 'The whites keep moving away and we Negroes keep trying to push into new areas of the city', says William Sims, a Negro lawyer who also serves as head of Buffalo's chapter of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. 'Before long most of the

¹⁰ Who encouraged this exodus from the South of millions of undesirables, many of whom will become wards of the State at the expense of business men, honest professional men, and laborers who pay their taxes? Did this happen before the desegregation legislation? To repeat: *who will suffer the most?* Is it the Negro race, the workers in New York now paying almost double the former rent, *and no desirable places offered for rent?*

¹¹ This is an admission of a developing dangerous situation. What will it be like in another twelve months, if not a repetition of the past twelve months?

city will be Negro, the suburbs white. That's segregation, all over again'."¹²

"Many Negroes here in Buffalo vigorously attack the projected reconstruction of the deteriorating Ellicott district, which is populated mostly by colored people. Their argument: That civic leaders want to confine the fast-expanding Negro population to one section of Buffalo, thus reserving the rest of the city and suburbs for white home owners.¹³ By doing this, charge the Negroes, Buffalo officials hope to pull back to the city many white families who fled to the suburbs supposedly to escape Negro encroachment and seek more elbow room.

"Long Delay

"We're being segregated all over again," says Mr. Sims.¹⁴

¹² This was clearly foreseen by the enlightened minds of both white and colored while there was agitation for desegregation legislation. The proponents made one serious error: *They never suspected that the white race would so readily give up their homes and move into new areas by themselves. On the contrary, it was confidently expected, and plans made accordingly, that the white race would fight for their rights and privileges—a bloody conflict result—then the new Civil Rights Law would be called into action. Possibly by instinct the white race recognized this danger.* Now what can be done? There is as yet no Law which will compel the white race to remain living in any one place, or that would compel them to return to their former place of residence.

¹³ There has been no indication thus far that civic leaders have any such desire. The contrary is true as so clearly shown by the fact that in most instances, if not all, it was the civic leaders who were in the forefront fighting for the desegregation of housing laws.

¹⁴ Mr. Sims is greatly in error. It was the agitators, seeming friends of the Negro, who fought for the desegregation Supreme

"Negro protests, along with several other factors, helped delay the Ellicott project for several years. But Buffalo planners now hope to launch it within the next few weeks. Officials hotly deny all segregation charges, of course.

"In New York City, Negro City Councilman Earl Brown opposes construction of new low-rent public housing in Harlem, charging:

"'When you embalm low-rent housing in Harlem you also embalm segregated schools and low quality stores'. Many New York Negroes instead favor the location of these projects in white neighborhoods on the fringe of the city.

"Buffalo's Negro population now amounts to some 10% of its total of about 600,000, compared with a mere 3% in 1940. In Chicago, now 19% Negro, colored people are expected to comprise one-third of the population by 1970. And New York City, with 8.7% of its present population non-white, will have one-third of its population made up of Negroes and Puerto Ricans in 12 years, according to the State Commission Against Discrimination.

"Off the Farm"

"What pulls the Negroes to Buffalo? Basically, the same forces that draw them to other parts of the North—the hope of obtaining better jobs and of escaping racial segregation.

"The spread of farm mechanization throughout the South, with its consequent reduction in the demand for unskilled labor, has further spurred the migration. Thus, between 1940 and 1950, when the last U. S. Census was

Court edict which desegregated the Negro. Now "the chickens have come home to roost." *The Negro has resegregated himself.*

taken, the nation's 14 biggest metropolitan areas experienced a 68% increase in Negro population: white population rose by only 4% over that same period. Indications are that the trend has been accentuated in more recent years.

"Some Negroes venture northward to New York or St. Louis or Chicago and then veer west to the Pacific Coast. Others remain in the East, but drift from city to city in search of better conditions. The migrants tend to settle in those portions of town which are most easily accessible to them.

"Here in Buffalo, city officials say the economic repercussions of the population shift are readily apparent. Since 1952 the police budget has leaped from \$5.6 million to \$7.4 million, education expenditures have increased from \$19 million to \$25 million. County welfare spending, meanwhile has surged from \$4.7 million in 1944, to \$15.6 million in 1949, to \$21.1 million in 1957. Buffalo also has started a Youth Bureau to curb the rising wave of juvenile crime; its budget increased from \$52,000 in 1956 to \$117,000 this year.

"'We're being loaded with high costs at a time when Buffalo is really strapped for revenues,' complains Budget Director P. V. Baczkowski. The new residents' income generally are too low to enable them to produce as much tax revenue as those leaving the city, officials say.

"City officials, taking stock of current municipal problems, hold out little hope for future reductions in expenditures. The job of the Youth Bureau, for example, continues to expand. 'Recently there's been a high incidence of gang fights pitting whites against colored—particularly in changing neighborhoods', says Richard V. Carnival, head of the Bureau. 'There's no doubt that the

new migrants cause most of our problem.¹⁵ And things have been made more difficult by the exodus of middle class families to the suburbs, robbing our city of its stable elements'.¹⁶

"Buffalo's Ellicott Negro district is a dingy thicket of clapboard houses, one-room churches and scabrous saloons. 'It's a colored slum of the worst kind, and just a stone's throw from our best business district', says a Buffalo bank executive.

"'Fifty years ago a fast paint and repair job could have put us back in shape, but now there's nothing around here that's worth putting a paint brush to', comments a long-term Negro resident.

"Buffalo's fast-moving urban planners apparently agree. Bolstered by a just-announced \$9.8 million grant from the Urban Renewal Administration, they're set to level a vast 29-block section of Ellicott, complete the relocation of its existing occupants in other neighborhoods and prepare the site for new construction. Officials hope to persuade private builders to put up middle income housing for some 1,300 families. Another 1,300 families will be housed in public housing projects.

"Rebuilding Skid Row"

"Blueprints for the Ellicott project have been in the works for several years now. But while civic and Federal officials were haggling over the terms of the grant and

¹⁵ What an admission, and made by a public official. The "truth certainly has been crushed to earth" but is raising its head with a vengeance.

¹⁶ Another candid admission, a hidden fact revealed. If this continues and more of the truth is faced, *there is the possibility of a remedy being found*. This is *not* possible by the universal hiding of facts we have witnessed during the past year.

Negro leaders were trying to get the plans changed, the Negro population spilled out from Ellicott into surrounding areas. To clean up newly blighted neighborhoods Buffalo planners again turned to the Federal Government —this time to request \$106,000 to survey possible redevelopment of the nearby Masten district.

"Buffalo hopes to obtain a \$7 million Federal grant to pay part of the cost of preparing a site in the Masten district for another major renewal project. Its application for an \$11.2 million grant to redevelop the skid row waterfront area also is pending with the Urban Renewal Administration.

"The Federal Government already has earmarked over \$1 billion for 506 urban renewal projects in 305 U. S. cities and towns. Most of these projects, however, have yet to emerge in the form of concrete and steel.

"Many problems must be overcome before these ambitious projects can take shape. Among the most difficult is that of relocation—what to do with families displaced in the preparation of construction sites. Buffalo, along with many other towns, already has had its troubles with the thorny relocation issue.

"'The relocation of displaced families—particularly Negroes—combined with Negro suspicion of renewal projects have been among the biggest problems delaying our programs,' says an official of the Urban Renewal Administration. 'We insist that displaced families receive decent, sanitary housing that won't turn into a slum, too.'

"During the relocation period, many families are moved into public housing, others are assisted by authorities in finding new dwellings. Many families get aid in footing moving bills.

"In clearing the ground for a pair of seven-story public housing projects in the Ellicott district, many Buf-

falo Negro families found themselves relocated in a nearby, hitherto German neighborhood called the Fruit Belt.¹⁷ 'It was remarkable how fast the tensions started arising', says one veteran planning official.

"And you couldn't blame the whites. When you start crowding Negroes into a small, stable neighborhood, they tend to bring the slums along with them.

"Now the city is trying to persuade residents of the once-German section to repair and paint their houses; to make sure they do"¹⁸ Buffalo recently passed a stricter building inspection code.¹⁹ In the Fruit Belt (called thusly because most streets in the section are named after fruits), Inspectors are touring each home telling residents what they must do to 'rehabilitate' the neighborhood. If they cooperate—as city officials aver they will—occupants of Fruit Belthouses will spend about \$1 million fixing up their homes to conform to city housing standards.

"The white landlords create the slums,"²⁰ charges

¹⁷ What should these families have expected? Life is a *personal responsibility* whether one be white or black. It is *the duty of the individual to himself to prepare for eventualities, neither expecting, nor depending, upon others to do it for him.*

¹⁸ The revealing, by *admission* of still more truths and facts. This begins to sound almost like the open confessions at a religious meeting. It is written that "confession is good for the Soul." Such admissions, if they continue and proper action is taken, may solve problems that affect the lives of millions, and may save much bloodshed.

¹⁹ This is a return to the action of *compulsion*, the *very thing that has brought all these evils upon us.* Compulsion, unless based on Justice, is the breeder of crime and many other evils. *It has never really solved the problem.* At best, it has only succeeded in replacing one evil with another, possibly a greater one.

²⁰ This is only a half truth. It is true that in many instances

King Peterson, one of Buffalo's two Negro representatives on the City Council. 'Often they split up two apartments into five or six, thus increasing their rental income, but badly overcrowding the facilities'.

"Because of these relocation schemes it's often the newest migrants from the South who penetrate into white neighborhoods in greatest number rather than the older, better established Negro families. This is a source of much frustration for these older Negroes—many of whom admit they're eager to move away from their more underprivileged neighborhood.²¹ The older Negro residents also resent the higher crime rate and lower living standards of the migrants—and the resulting black eye they have given to the entire Negro community.²²

unscrupulous landlords do this; first for profit, and again because they are importuned to do so by those who are desperately in need of rooms. However, in the majority of cases it is people who rent a room, or rooms, and then have others move in with them until as many as three or four families live in one or two rooms. This is openly admitted.

²¹ This is a frank admission that conditions have become so worsened that many of the better class Negroes are anxious to move away from other Negroes. This might be considered natural, but for the fact that up to the present the contention by those who claim to be fighting for equal rights for the Negro, and Negroes themselves, have boldly claimed equality with any white man. If this were true, why the sense of frustration? Why the eagerness to move from places they themselves may have obtained by forcing the white man to move?

²² Certainly an admission. Was it not the desire of the Negroes in New York, Chicago and other places, that the members of their race living in the South and, according to their views, grossly mistreated, should come to these cities? We repeat the question: did they think only the better class of Negroes would come North? If not, where did they think these lower class Negroes would settle?

"'Most of these migrants never had anything and never will', says Mr. Sims tartly. 'The whites don't have much use for most of them, and we don't either'.²³ A survey by the city's Urban League chapter indicates that most of the new Negroes are semi-skilled or unskilled. Over 83% come from the deep or middle South states, but usually arrive in Buffalo only after stopping off in some other Northern city.

"Trouble at Dante"

"'Too many of these folks still don't know how to use garbage cans',²⁴ says another Negro resident. 'You should see what happened to our Dante housing project. It's a mess, and all of our people get blamed for it'.²⁵ Despite efforts to sustain a racial balance²⁶ at Dante, the project now is predominantly Negro.

²³ There is much frankness in Mr. Sim's admission that the white man does not want this class of Negro, and that they themselves, members of the same race, *do not want them either*. *Why then the condemnation of the people of the South who have to, or were forced to live with them all these years? Where is the fairness, the Justice?*

²⁴ This is an example of what happened when full freedom of action was granted these hordes that came North from the South without proper supervision. Crime and filth is the natural result. It cannot be otherwise.

²⁵ If the colored people want their race to continue living in the South, they should follow the example of the responsible white people by assuming responsibility for the behavior of the members of their race, apprehending those guilty of any form of crime, see to it that they are properly prosecuted and punished, and again like the white man, not hesitate to mention to which race the culprit belongs.

²⁶ If the colored man is the equal of the white man, as based on their claims, should not they, like the white man, keep the balance amongst themselves, and not expect the white man to

"All these resentments add fuel to the current controversy over the Ellicott renewal project. Negro leaders are all the more wary about relocation, and about the long-run implications of the plans. They're resentful, too, over being 'left out' of most of the planning sessions—a fact that's denied by some officials, affirmed by others.

"The city started out on the wrong foot in Ellicott", says Paul J. Speyser, Jr., executive director of the Buffalo and Erie County Planning Association, a private planning body. 'The Ellicott people were told what was going to happen only after all the plans were made. It's a pretty serious thing to move a Negro family, which by some miracle, had managed to buy a house—even a run-down Ellicott house'.

"Ellicott businessmen are particularly agitated over the renewal blueprints. Again, their fear is that they'll be unable to locate in some other part of town after their places of business are torn down. 'I have no place to move to and I can't stay where I am—where does that leave me?' asks James R. Garrett, an aging Ellicott district printer.

"The most common fear of Ellicott residents: That the new developments will knock down their old houses, construct shiny new ones—but still not solve any of the

sacrifice himself, his family, his home, and all he has worked for?" The individual, the race, is *responsible for itself*. It must accept the penalties for infractions, as it expects the benefits. If the white man had Laws passed to compel the Negro to leave the South and come North, he would be responsible. *The contrary is true. Legislation is to the effect that the North must accept these millions which even the colored people do not want, and suffer from the degradation and crimes of these unwanted ones.*

social issues they believe to be at the root of their difficulties.

"'We're going to be walled in', runs the common cry.

"Natty, white-haired Mayor Frank A. Sedita, surrounded by his planning staff in City Hall, insists that there are no plans to confine Negroes to the Ellicott area. Some planners even talk of drawing white families to Ellicott. Says redevelopment director William Denne:

"'We're hoping to provide sufficient neighborhood amenities to attract many whites into the redeveloped Ellicott district'. But he adds: 'I'm sure what will happen, of course'.

"Negro leaders, however, claim that Buffalo planners have a big stake in bottling up the Negro population. If City Hall officials are going to be successful in their efforts to attract middle class whites back into Center City, they argue, they'll have to guarantee them freedom from Negro encroachment. Planners already are talking about building luxury apartment houses on the waterfront site—well removed from the core of Negro settlement." Tibbs Moxey, Professor in a Negro College, wrote:

"A similar scheme, say Negro leaders, now is being put into effect in Philadelphia. City officials concede that they're planning the big, 2,500-acre Eastwick project as a white neighborhood, and are carefully pricing it out of the average Negro's range. The object: Again to lure whites back into the city, thus rebuilding Philadelphia's sagging tax base.

Ever since men began to think, their desire was for the things that did not belong to them, or that was not best for them, and when they obtained it, found it to their detriment, blaming those from whom they took it by "hook or crook." This is as

true today as it was in the past, and will no doubt continue so for a long time to come.

" 'As a taxpayer I can appreciate the idea behind these urban renewal plans', says one prominent Buffalo Negro. 'A Negro city is a poverty-stricken city. But, as a colored man, I feel that planned segregation²⁷ is too high a price to pay for the return of the white people to the city'. Many Negro leaders, however, admit that segregation, planned or unplanned, is bound to take place in most urban areas.

²⁷ Not segregation, but *resegregation*, has returned to the Negro whether or not he desires it. *The Law was set into motion, accelerated by many renegade white men, and the reaction has already set in.* While the white race will suffer for a time, *the Negro race will suffer much more.* Their clock has been set back one hundred years by those they believed to have had their welfare at heart, when it was in fact with the intent of selfish profit.

CHAPTER TEN

Section One

Another City Awakens From Its Slumber

In seventy-nine years of life, we have seen many changes of habits, proceedings and reversals of opinions, but in all those years nothing compares to the public ACTION AND REACTION to the Negro question.

When the second and revised edition of THE AGE OF TREASON was placed into the hands of an editor, it was strictly taboo for newspapers to use the word Negro, and the Negroes as a whole bitterly resented anyone doing so. Now, before the copy can go to press there is a complete reversal in both the press, and the outspokenness of the better and more substantial class of Negroes. This made it necessary to eliminate much of what had been added to the Chapter on SEGREGATION to find room for the new appraisal on the subject.

The *Sunday Bulletin*, (Philadelphia) May 4, 1958 edition tells the sad story under the heading:

"City Stirred by Negro Crime Wave"
"Public Shocked by Latest Murder, but Its Memory is Short"
"By John C. Calpin

Here the readers are told of the change that has taken place in relation to the public opinion of the citizens of the City of *Brotherly Love*, after the "dog had bitten the hand that fed it."

"We wonder how long the present public indignation about murder of a Korean student by a gang of 11 hoodlums last week will continue.

"The city has seen somewhat similar atrocious attacks, on storekeepers or old women. There have been

public outcries. Within a matter of days, however, all is forgotten except by the widows and orphans or families of the beaten or killed.¹

"All week since the senseless killing by some 'underprivileged' youths who had been refused admission to a dance, there have been statements made. There have been statements by the police; statements by judges denying any softness toward crime; statements attacking the police; statements praising them; discussions of police dogs to work with beat patrolmen; of the shortage of police and of faulty police techniques."²

¹ Despite the terrible crimes committed against the innocent citizens of Philadelphia, the many robberies and assaults, the newspapers did not want to, or did not dare, report who committed them. Moreover, the "legal mills" did not even grind slowly to see that justice was done to the victims. Both the people, and officials not directly affected, made all manner of excuses for the criminals.

All of this time, because nothing was done to control the situation, *because they were Negroes*, (and it was their nature), the "wind was developing into a whirlwind." The citizens of Philadelphia, as in other cities, are reaping the results of their laxity in *meting out justice and punishing those who committed the various crimes as they have, and would have—if they had been white men. There can be no difference in justice because of race or creed.*

² All this is superficiality. Excuses! When the first crime was committed it was the duty of *all public officials* involved in the enforcement of the Law, to act, irrespective of the fact that it was a Negro, instead of a white man who was guilty.

Will the honest citizens of Philadelphia deny this? If the officials—no matter what their position—failed to act, then it was the duty of all citizens en masse to demand action be taken by the officials and justice, with proper punishment be meted out. Failing to do this, they as citizens, were as guilty of encouraging crimes, as the officials. Will anyone deny this?

"Words of Indignation"

"Other judges have called the young criminals names and have made headlines. The district attorney has said he will seek the death penalties."³

"And the Russians⁴ have a perfect piece of propaganda to sell in Korea and to hold up to the world.

"And this weekend, no doubt, there will be more women beaten and old men robbed and within a few days will be a big "rumble" between gangs in West Philadelphia.⁵

"There have been vicious murders before and juries have convicted some defendants as many as five times. Appellate courts have reversed them on technicalities found by slick lawyers. Errors by judges and prosecutors have resulted in killers being turned loose.⁶

³ All this, in crude language, was, is, simply "passing the buck," making excuses, doing nothing, and the innocent must pay. *But, are they innocent?* If men are aware of a great danger, and do not become active in preventing it, and the danger proves to be real, *are they innocent?*

⁴ Why give a thought to the Russians? Who or what are they to cause us concern? This crime against the Korean was not directly committed by the Government of either City, State or Nation, but by a group who, because of their unfitness of character, should not be acceptable as citizens, while Russia as a government commits crimes by the millions more atrocious than that committed by this uncontrolled gang.

⁵ Undoubtedly if quick and *positive* action is not taken by both the officials of the City, and the *responsible* Negroes to arrest and punish this undesirable, inhuman class, there will be many more such crimes *against unprotected men, women and children of the city.*

⁶ Every time this happens, it is a *carte blanc* directive by public officials, with the consent of the citizens, to tell these criminals, many hardened and without morals, or any sense of responsibility, not "Go thou and sin no more," but "go forth

"There was a time when criminal punishment was too severe and there was public revulsion. The pendulum seems to have swung the other way entirely, and now the utmost liberty is given criminals. The 'bleeding heart' social workers who make up most of the penal and correctional staffs seem to think that a slap on the wrist is enough for a criminal who uses brass knuckles or a lead pipe on a defenseless old man or woman; that probation, given over and over again, is the answer and that we mustn't hurt the feelings of the poor 'underprivileged'.⁷

"Judges and magistrates with political ties and political fears are only too happy to accept their decisions.

"Sometimes, it almost seems that there is a conspiracy to weaken the effectiveness of the courts, the criminal processes and even the public schools."⁸

and repeat the crime; only let it be a little more offensive." We the citizens will see to it that your punishment will be light, and that you will be pardoned soon. Can this be denied? Do the people not have the proof in the favors shown to hardened criminals? Have your judges not stated so openly? If this is not true, we humbly apologize. We do not wish to be guilty of erroneous conclusions.

⁷ Let us no longer close our eyes to facts; no longer be hoodwinked or misled by false statements. These criminals—hordes of them that the better class of Negroes in cities such as New York, especially Buffalo, freely admit are unfit to associate, live with or near, are not "underprivileged."

On the contrary, the Supreme Court and the Civil Rights legislation has conferred upon them rights and privileges no white man in America possesses. It has made this criminal, low class—so designated by their own race—*first class American citizens.* The far-sighted or newly awakened Negro is now aware that the *de-Segregation edict* has resulted in a state of *segregation much worse than before.*

⁸ This is due to the terrific *demoralization brought about by what is so erroneously called "progressive education."* The

"There has been a growing feeling of insecurity among the populace because of the recent muggings. Many citizens talk of buying and carrying guns, as they walk fearfully on the streets at night. The shift of citizens to the suburbs has accelerated as the crime wave gains strength.

"Younger Generation"

"Much of the trouble goes back to the younger generation of the Negro race. It would be nice to be able to pretend it isn't so and hide one's head in the sand, but statistics and facts can't be shrugged off. It is unpopular⁹ to discuss Negro crime and the Negroes have done little to help themselves.

"Philadelphia, traditional City of Brotherly Love, opened its heart, its arms and its purse to the less fortunate from the earliest days. Now the repayment is in crime,

correct term would be "progressive, secretly enforced *de-education*" for which the public, the taxpayer, is in great part responsible, because he blindly accepted it, and has permitted it to continue, despite the publicity given to the general immorality of teenagers attending such schools and colleges.

⁹ This is a wholly incorrect term. Downright hypocritical, would be far more honestly descriptive. As a result of this self-imposed blindness, the worst element of a low class was first given super privileges, *none of which had been earned, and then allowed to take over, and finally to take for themselves, by violence and crime, that which they could not obtain otherwise.* The better class and permanently settled Negroes permitted themselves to be "brainwashed" by the supposed "freedom" of the desegregation edict. They now admit that they are the greatest sufferers, and are paying a mighty stiff price. It is they who must begin to control their "lesser brethren," just as the white man had to punish the malfactors of his race, without a thought of the race to which he belonged. *House cleaning begins at home.*

terrorism of schools and institutions and a lessening of standards generally. Many of the 'less fortunate,' are unemployable and incapable of being educated.¹⁰

"Negro youth, boys and girls, almost monopolize many of the recreation centers,¹¹ not only those in their own neighborhoods but in white areas too.

"There have been running battles around high schools, in particular, covered up by police, the schools and other authorities. They have frightened school teachers and some refuse to work in schools in Negro areas.¹²

"Every one of the 11 who killed In-Ho Oh had a police record. One, in particular, had been placed on pro-

¹⁰ Properly speaking, this degraded, criminal element is not "less fortunate." They are less mentally and morally developed, and have no conception of right, virtue, responsibility, or of anything that is emotionally human.

¹¹ This, now recognized for its gross injustice, is a just cause for the white citizens' growing bitterness toward all members of the Negro race. If it continues it will lead to uncontrollable murderous class struggles. This is indicated by the fact that the comparatively few criminally natured individuals in cities like Philadelphia and New York are *admittedly uncontrollable by the appointed officials*.

¹² The almost unbelievable demoralization and crime conditions in the New York schools is the proof of how lawless, an essential and once well organized institution can become. This condition, at least for the moment, is apparently beyond the control of the entire police department of New York, and as a result, many innocent people have been murderously assaulted, teen-aged girls raped, actual murders committed, making the streets of that great city unsafe. This is a condition such as never existed before, and is mostly due to the inertia of the parents of school children and the taxpayers which gives the worst *human elements* the idea that *they are the equal of the most cultured of our citizens, with greater rights*.

bation four times, including the latest for a long series of assault robberies.¹³

"No Place for Them"

"The authorities say they don't have room to put them in institutions. Why not? Perhaps the money spent on probation officers and environment investigations and psychiatrists and the Youth Study Center should be cut in half and a minimum security prison started.¹⁴

"The talk of building a multi-million-dollar stadium seems unrealistic when there are not enough prison, mental and welfare facilities. Stadium discussions and studies of how to tear down City Hall and replace it with expensive buildings should be forgotten while more important things are to be done. Even the money spent on these studies would seem to be wasted, for the time being.¹⁵

¹³ According to the Laws of some States, four-time offenders receive the extreme prison penalty. In the city of Brotherly Love, there seems to be evidence that the love(?) must all be on the one side, while the members of the other side, may do practically as they please, being assured that probation, and the opportunity for new violence, will generally follow.

¹⁴ This suggestion appears to be an excellent one, the past efforts having utterly failed. It would also be a good idea if aid to decadent nations, and the millions spent in erecting fine buildings, be cut in half, and the money used for corrective institutions under the jurisdictions of practical men.

¹⁵ More and more of our law abiding, and practical citizens are becoming convinced that the vast amount of money spent on such "studies" have been worse than wasted. In their very nature they seem to be a further incentive to the evils so rampant and indicate that what is needed is a return to the former methods for *practical law enforcement by the arrest of all offenders, their swift and impartial trial, with no exception as*

"Any such discussions as these, including the cutting down on relief appropriations, always bring about bleats of anguish from the social do-gooders."

to race and creed; fair and just sentences according to the offense or crime committed, and paroles only in exceptional cases so that it would be known in advance what to expect for the degenerate and criminal minded.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

A Master Race — By What Standard Can a Master Race be Recognized?

You cannot recognize a Master Race by its own claims and pretensions, nor by its ability to subjugate other races, by one means or another, to its Will. The only standard for judgment must be by its achievements, tolerance of other races, resistance to interference by individuals, groups or races, humanitarianism, morality, acceptance of the Law of Personal Responsibility, and ABOVE ALL ELSE, *pride of race, whatever that race may be.*

Is this pride of race not a cause for intolerance? Not at all. Every individual, irrespective of his race, should take pride in his race because God created him so; his creation being under the *Divine Law*, that Law must be fulfilled.¹ This is possible only if he accepts the Law and harmonizes his thoughts, desires and actions with it. He is an individual of a race, and whatever he does, must be done without interference with or from any other race, or dependence upon another race.

Because of a man's pride in his race, he should do all in his power to raise the standards of that race by example; help it to achieve great works, and build a high morality, a culture that not only compares favorably in every respect with the most advanced of all races, but supersedes it.

It is a Law of races, that the moment a race loses pride

¹ When this pride in race is lacking, or is lost, then an inferiority complex develops, and such a race will, almost as a whole, seek to obtain by force, legislation, or any other means, privileges and opportunities it is incapable or unwilling, of earning for itself. *Race conflicts result and will continue until one or the other becomes a subjective race.*

in its race, its decline has begun; decadence has set in, and it is only a matter of time, and the building up of another race, before it will become a secondary race.

This is not only a Natural Law, it is a Biological Law; it is a LAW OF SURVIVAL, and it is a DIVINE LAW. This Law, one of SELECTIVITY, had its beginning with man, and has governed all men throughout the ages.

How, specifically, does a race become a MASTER race?

By the development of the individual who awakens to a pride in himself—not a selfish pride, but one in his birth as of a race; to THE TRUST PLACED IN HIM BY HIS CREATOR; to a FAITH, CONFIDENCE and a CERTAIN DEGREE OF EGOTISM in his capability to achieve, and a reliance on the Biblical assurance THAT EVERY MAN IS ENDOWED WITH THE NECESSARY TALENT, TO MAKE OF HIMSELF A SUPER MAN, IF HE IS WILLING TO MAKE THE NECESSARY EFFORTS TO DEVELOP THESE TALENTS HIDDEN WITHIN—A PART OF HIMSELF—TO THE FULLEST EXTENT.

Would not this acceptance of the three laws: NATURAL, PERSONAL, AND DIVINE, tend to make him egotistical in the sense that he would think of himself and his race as SPECIFICALLY selected, or brought into being for the express purpose of becoming the Master race, dominant over all others?

It would not, because this development into a superior being AS A RESULT OF ACCOMPLISHMENTS, IS NOT THE RESULT OF RACE, IT DOES NOT RECOGNIZE COLOR. It recognizes only one thing: THE DEVELOPMENT OF MAN'S INNATE, IN-BORN, THOUGH GENERALLY DORMANT POTENTIAL.

If he obeys the Laws of such development, he becomes the super man. The proof of the Master race is IN ITS ACHIEVEMENTS, AND ITS TOLERANCE OF ALL OTHER RACES, AND INTOLERANCE TO INTERFERENCE.

Who among all the races today stands foremost in its accomplishments? Is there any question about it? To what

country, to what people, to what race, have practically all the people of earth come for sustenance? For help, money, arms and men to save them from extinction? There is but one answer. That Country is America; that people, Americans. What race? The Anglo-Saxon, a blood and brain mixture of Aryans, Nordics and Anglo-Saxons, *incidentally*, a white people.²

What people built a country within a century and a half such as the world never knew before and (for the moment), that stands supreme? It is in greater danger of following other nations to decadence because, unfortunately, listening to the Satanic tempter, it is forgetting its race pride, and therefore gradually forfeiting its "place in the sun"—America!

According to the legends of ancient India, though there is no factual history of this, India rose to sublime heights in its culture while the white Aryans governed the country, and they subscribed to the *Christos*—God in man—concept. When it lost its race pride, *and its Spiritual outlook*, its decadence began.

Egypt for thousands of years, was, like India before it, a country that had advanced almost beyond the dreams of men in its religious concepts, its acceptance of a GOD OF LIGHT, its morality, its personal culture, and its mighty achievements. With the fading of race pride, resultant intermarriage and mongrelization, its decadence began, and except for its historic remains would not even be a memory.

Egypt dovetailed into the Christian area by reason of its religion, and the teachings of the Essenes. From the Essenes comes the concept of man's capacity to develop into almost Divine beings by accepting the Biblical "talent" idea, and putting to work these talents *within* himself to become a

²This is for the moment. Other countries, other peoples became great in culture, mighty in achievement, but because of lack of vigilance, and cessation of the necessary efforts as a result of the weakening desire for ease, became decadent, or fell victim to a less cultured, but more vigorous people.

SUPER being. This teaching was accepted by the Nordics, brought into England by the Anglo-Saxons, and became known as Christianity.

That Egypt actually was *founded* by a white race, and built into its mighty estate by Aryans, possibly from ancient India, has been authoritatively shown by Colonel Ernest Sevier Cox, of Richmond, Virginia, in his book first published in 1937, and accepted by many of the greatest institutes of learning. It proves as conclusively as possible, that Egypt was founded by a blonde people, coming from a Mediterranean branch of the white race:

"Homer's Greek heroes were described as tall men³ with flowing golden hair, which means that these early Greeks, the founders, originated in Northern Europe, and thus were descended substantially from the same stock as the present day hard, energetic Scotch, English, Irish, Germanic, Scandinavian and related Nordic strains — kinsmen of Washington, Jefferson, MacArthur.

"The blond and brunette strains of Nordic stock probably are indistinguishable in other characteristics; but inasmuch as the only race which produced blonds is Nordic, or Northern European, we have indisputable evidence of the racial origin of early Greece. Skulls and skeletons confirm Homer, of course, revealing Nordic heads and bony structure.

"America was not built by the climate, the trees, the soil, the rivers, which the Creator generously put here.

³ It is possible that many people, even of the white race, will say that Homer's story is built on legend, but if so, this proves a great deal more than the exact fact. It proves that the non-white race writers, even of that day, aspired to the rights and privileges which the white race *earned* for itself, and a desire for the close association with that race.

Africa is far richer in these things; but Africa remained substantially a land of free dwellers⁴ except as white missionaries of religion, culture and industry introduced material improvements."

"The industrious and ever resourceful Germans have done well for untold thousands of years in a land of hilly, rocky soil, with limited mineral resources and a fearful climate.⁵

"It was the restless white man,⁶ ever hell-bent for making the world a better place to live, who cleared away

⁴ Though of unknown age, and of millions of people, Africa did not rise to greatness. America, on the other hand, peopled by a white race imbued with imagination, indomitable desire, willingness to work, and a Will to achieve, did more in a century and a half, than was done in Africa by the natives throughout the ages. Why? Not because their skin was dark or black—color had nothing to do with it—but because they lacked the incentive, the desire, the initiative, and above all, the Biblical concept that there was born in man such talents, free for his acceptance, which, if brought into manifestation, would readily have helped them to accomplish as much, if not more, than the white man did in America.

⁵ As an instance, Germany prospered, not because the German was a Nordic, but solely due to the fact that he gave his imagination, and his inventive ability, full play. He was ambitious, aye, egotistical, and believed he could accomplish all that profane and sacred literature had promised he might. He accepted the *Christic* concept that man may achieve next to God by a development of his innate possibility, by *pride in his race, and by never ending effort; achievement being his joy and his glory.*

What the Germans did, *men of all races may do*, if they have the incentive, and the Will, to *live according to the decree of their race. They can prove that like the white man, their source was the same; the promise given them no less.*

⁶ I am proud of the white race of which I am one; but I believe, and freely admit, that *every race could achieve every-*

the wilderness and built the stateliest mansions of all times,⁷ including the society of free men,⁸ with its magnificent constitution of civil law.

"The great Anglo-Saxon race (because of its gradual loss of pride in race and its achievements, permitting other races to begin to dominate), builders of the highest order of civilization,⁹ with a government protecting other races with 'bills of rights', and a kindly generous live-and-let-

thing the white man has done, if it were willing to do everything the white man did; and *refuse to interfere with the rights of every other race: living among themselves in the manner that the white man lives with his neighbor*. In acting otherwise, they may succeed in destroying the white man and his civilization, but in doing so they will *at the same time* destroy themselves and their race.

⁷ Just as the white man came into a wilderness, cold and for the most part forbidding, (and made bitter enemies of the native Americans, because he had not yet learned *the rights and privileges of others*), but by dint of hard work and suffering, carved a great nation out of that wilderness, the natives of Africa could have more easily done so in their native land, because they were confronted with only a few of the obstacles the white man was forced to overcome in America.

⁸ Much of Africa is a paradise. Native food is easy to procure. The climate is far less rigorous than that of America, and all, and more, that the white man did in America, including the building of "mansions," might have been, or might still be, accomplished there by its native children.

⁹ Freedom is a matter of choice and eternal vigilance. In a truly free society, few laws are necessary; men govern themselves. It is only when one class of men attempts to curtail the freedom of others, that multiplicity of legal enactments become necessary. The one who, by means of "laws" enslaves others for the moment, or for a time, *enslaves himself the more; the dictator of today becomes the enslaved, or the victim of his own making, on the morrow*.

live racial temperament¹⁰—is now on its way out. Unless the race as a whole resists, it, as a race, will disappear from this earth.”¹¹

Within recent years there has been much ado about the white man claiming supremacy. Sifted down, it would appear that with the exception of Hitler and those converted to his ideas for world supremacy by his race, white men as a whole have been far too busy with other affairs to give much consideration to the subject, and it is only since the propaganda for racial integration has become so active that he, the man most concerned, has become *conscious* of the race question.

Suppose it were actually true, which it is most certainly not, that the white man claimed, or pretended, to be the Master race. This claim would make him no more guilty than the Jew,¹² who, for thousands of years has laid claim, consistently and persistently, of being GOD’S CHOSEN PEOPLE. During all of these centuries the white Gentile has neither persecuted him for making such claims, nor even demanded the passage of special privileges to prohibit him from laying claim, or pretending, to be THE chosen people. In fact, decidedly little attention has been given the subject.

No one can actually disprove the Jew’s contention that he is God’s chosen, but to sustain his claim, he must, **LIKE ALL MEN MAKING CLAIMS, PROVE HIS SUPERIORITY** by his *accomplishments and his humanity*.

¹⁰ This may be the cause of its fall. With such a temperament there is the utmost necessity for every individual, great and small, rich and poor, to remember and act according to the precept: “*Eternal vigilance is the price of liberty*”, or the Great Master-Teacher’s command: “*Watch ye and pray.*”

¹¹ Robert H. Williams; Williams’ Intelligencer Summary, September, 1956.

¹² The term “Jew” is here used with every respect.

It has been said of the colored race that they are the oldest of God's children, and therefore should be favored. Is this claim justified by facts? If so, where are their great works; their culture, morality, Spirituality, and their self-built cities governed by just laws, the result of untold centuries of experience?

Many Asiatics, a conglomeration of races, all of them age old, some of them at one time or another having a culture almost beyond compare, but long since fallen into Spiritual decadence, are now in absolute control over millions, and claim the right to all power and dominance. Where is there a sign of justice to even their own people; their glory, morality, kindness, generosity, benevolence,—all that makes of men, MEN? All that remains, judging by their acts, is murder, rapine, degradation, brutality by the stronger over the weaker; a recurrence to the worst features of inhumanity.

If the Jews throughout the centuries had the right, or took to themselves the privilege without objection, of claiming to be "God's chosen people," but have failed to prove their inheritance, does not the white man, the Aryan, the Caucasian, have the same right to claim that his is the Master race? What has the white man done to prove it? He has progressed farther than all other nations in inventive ability, making the lot of all men, easier. He has manifested a universal generosity unknown to the rest of the races. His culture was slow in the process of overcoming his lesser tendencies. In a few hundred years he has accomplished more than all other races put together. There is a debit side: the white man's world is still infested with some of the world's greatest gangsters; with politicians of the lowest order; with white slavers holding virtue of no value—a commodity to barter with; dope peddlers destroying the bodies and Souls of children.

As a Master race he has not justly dealt with these outlaws of his race. He is not proud of them. He does not hide the fact that they are of the white race. He is aware of the fact that he

must "clean house" in his own race, speak out boldly, expose them, placing on record the evils of which the degraded of his own race are guilty.

"Sam Jones," a white skin, found guilty as a cut throat gangster; as a white slaver; as a narcotic peddler; as a kidnapper; as a ward heeler, buying and selling free man's greatest heritage—their votes. The white man must not hesitate to free himself from these parasites by justly punishing the guilty of his own race, ceasing to hide their guilt because they *are* of his race.

It is humanities' competition. Claims no longer stand up by themselves. All races must prove themselves; their honesty, their morality, their kindness, their generosity, their personal responsibility, their ability to be self sufficient, and above all, their willingness to place blame where blame belongs; to call a "spade a spade"; to expose, condemn, and punish the guilty, no matter who they may be. None should be granted protection, or allowed to hide guilt, because of race.

The white race, with all its weaknesses, is willing and anxious to rely on its inner convictions and on its achievements. All it asks is to be left alone, and be permitted to help all the other races who actually need help and would use it to good advantage.

Only the red man among all men, does not constantly brag about his race superiority. He asks only to be the free man he was before he was made subject to superior strength, and to be granted the rights and privileges God conferred upon him, and which have always belonged to him and still belong to him.

Many of us believe, and our number is rapidly increasing, that in America the white man's greatest crime has been, AND CONTINUES TO BE, HIS TREATMENT OF THE INDIANS WITHIN HIS OWN COUNTRY. America has billions to freely give to decadent nations who actually have no call on us, while many

of its native children live in want, destitution and undescribable conditions.

This is gross, almost unbelievable injustice, and must be corrected to save the nation's honor. We, the people, cannot blame the Government, or our Legislators. **IT IS WE WHO ARE GUILTY, BECAUSE WE DO NOT DEMAND THE JUSTICE FOR OTHERS, THAT WE DEMAND FOR OURSELVES.**

The white man generally is Christian by profession. He believes or professes to believe, in Biblical teachings. He accepts, or claims to accept the *fiat*: "By the sweat of thy brow. . . ." Only that which he *has labored for and earned is rightly his*. Seriously, HAS THE WHITE MAN DEALT JUSTLY WITH THE INDIAN? WITH THE EXCEPTION OF A FEW INSTANCES, DID HE EXCHANGE SOMETHING OF EQUAL VALUE FOR THE THINGS HE TOOK UNTO HIMSELF? HAS THE WHITE MAN GIVEN THE INDIAN FREEDOM OF CHOICE OF MOVEMENT? HAS HE EXCHANGED LAND AS DESIRABLE AS THAT WHICH HE TOOK BY FORCE FROM THE INDIANS? HAS HE BUILT SCHOOLS EQUAL TO HIS OWN FOR THE INDIAN'S CHILDREN? HAS HE GIVEN THEM THE OPPORTUNITY FOR CULTURE? In short, *has the white man given the Indian whose lands he confiscated, an adequate exchange and opportunity equal to that which he is so freely giving the Negro?* Have WE, the white man, given even a semblance of justice?

If there is a God, and WE believe there is, if there is an operating Law of justice, if there is a LAW OF RETRIBUTION: "*As ye sow, so shall ye reap,*" might it not just be that any misfortune, any REACTION the white race is confronted with, is in just retribution of the Law we have so long and so completely ignored?

Let us be just to all people, but to be overly generous to one class and utterly unjust to another, will not even the score under the *Divine Law*.

Great ado has been made of what is called *discrimination*

as a result of *selectivity*.¹³ The very beginning of man, of Biblical history, starts out with discrimination, or selectivity. God's very first act with members of the first family was a choice between Cain and Abel. In this story there is not the slightest indication of the doctrine of EQUALITY except *as a result of attainment*. These two men, first of a new race, began the history of manifestation of the ABSOLUTE, UNVARYING LAW OF EQUAL opportunity for ALL men; but no EQUALITY unless *they MADE THEMSELVES SO*. The choice was theirs.

A sheet tabulating (author unknown) the Supreme Being's discrimination or selectivity from among His children, was mailed to us by a questioner, and we here reproduce it that it may be an incentive to research by all interested.

"God discriminated when He called Abraham and made covenant with him, and again when He confirmed that covenant with Abraham's son Isaac, and grandson Jacob. *Gen. 12:1-3, 26:3, 4 and 28:3, 4.*

"God discriminated when He selected the offspring of Jacob-Israel to become a kingdom of priests and a holy nation. *Ex. 19:6.*

"God discriminated when He gave His perfect law to Israel, and to no other peoples or nations. *Psalm 147; 19, 20.*

"God was discriminating when He ordained that the Israel people should become the 'sons of the Living God' or Christians. *Hosea 1:10, Rom. 8:39.*

"God used discrimination when He said that His people should make no covenant with the Canaanites, and that they should not intermarry with them. *Deut. 7:2.*

¹³ Discrimination is actually *in forcing men to do, or accept things which in themselves might not be wrong, by edicts or legislative enactments*. This was the law *before* the days of the *Magna Charta* and is once again raising its ugly head.

"Our Lord Jesus discriminated when He said, 'I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel'. *Matt. 15:24.*

"Jesus also discriminated when He selected the 12 apostles, and when He said to those who believe in Him, 'Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you'. *John 15:16.*

"In fact God's Word, the Bible, is a very discriminatory Book from *Genesis* to *Revelation*. And that God is discriminatory is clearly seen in the fact that in certain nations and peoples He has planted and nourished the Christian faith.

"God has shown discrimination in race, creed, and color. He selected the offspring of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob to be His human instrumentality, His witnesses, His chosen people, a chosen race. *Deut. 7:6, I Peter 1:1, 2 and 2:9.*

"America is the result of that selection.¹⁴ And this is the people whom evil forces are attempting to convert to the unScriptural idea of 'no discrimination because of what a man may be'."

¹⁴ The Anglo-Saxons, Aryans and Nordics.

To repeat: no race can long be sustained by political power, armies, possessions, or dictatorial forces. To be the Master race is *not* the result of birth nor of race or creed. It is attained by achievement; by conquest in self-control; in humility, morality, humanity, personal responsibility and righteousness—right doing by inner compulsion; the determination to be free men — whatever the cost!

"He amongst you is greatest who best serves his fellow man."